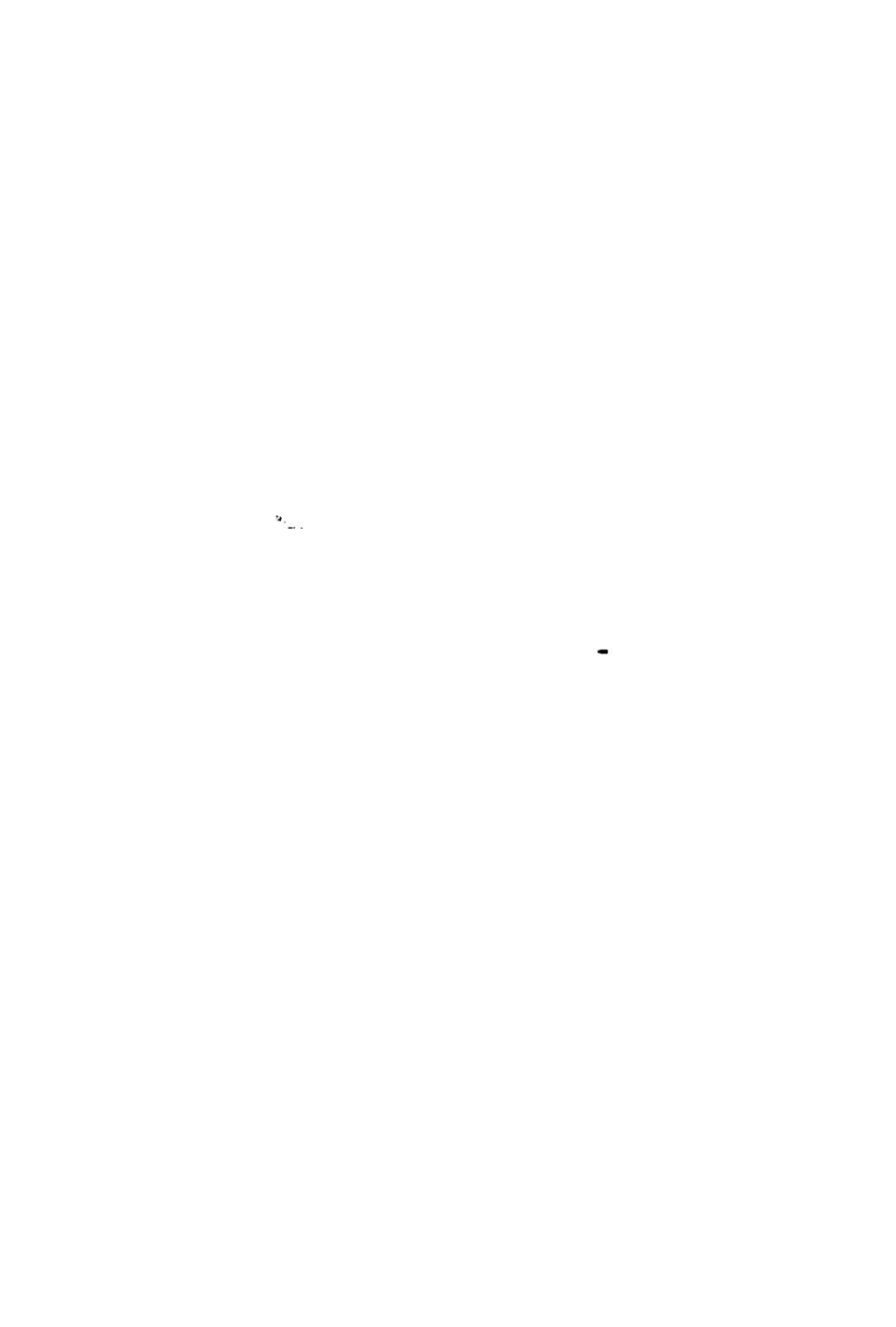


# THE MERCIER NEW TESTAMENT

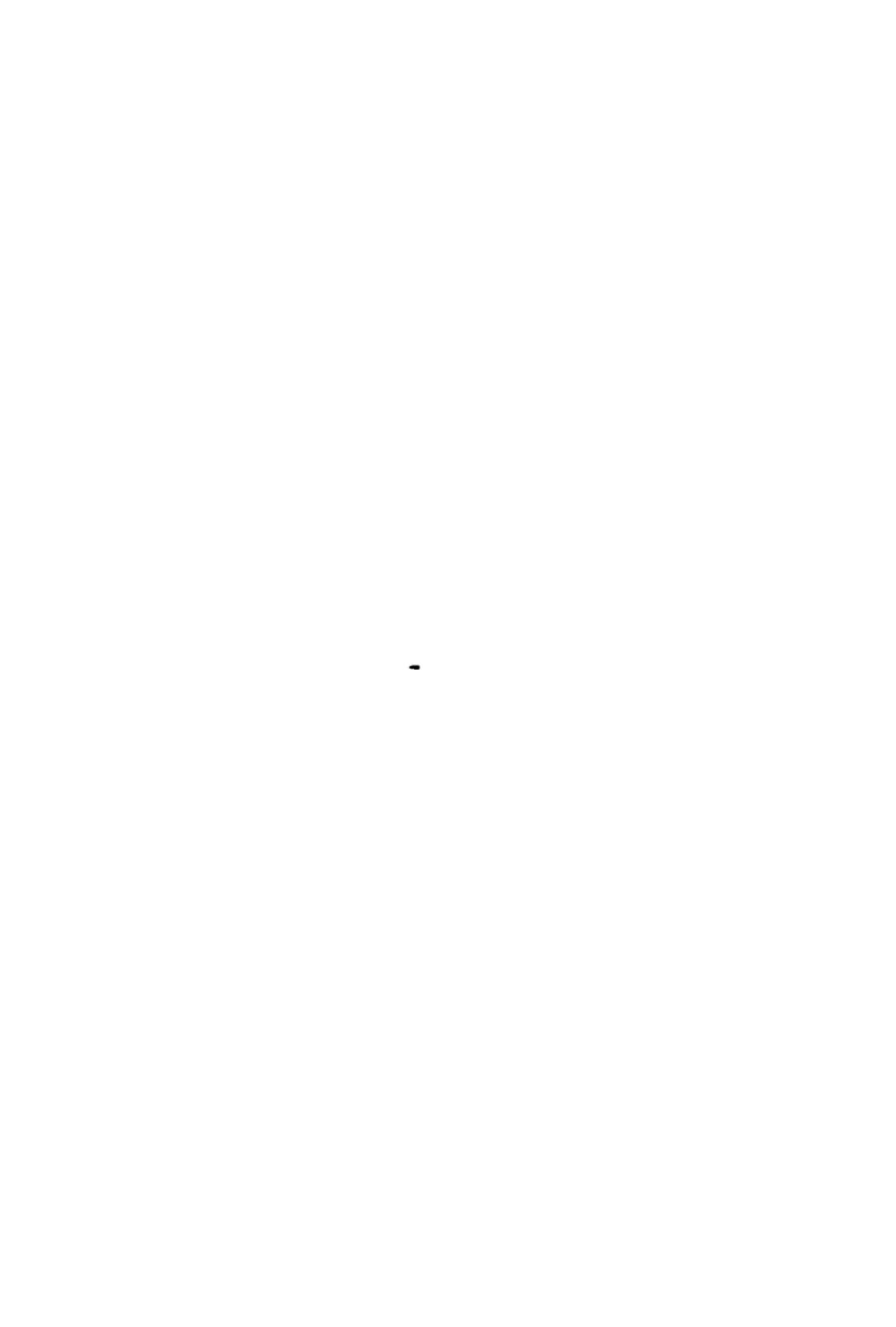
A VERSION  
OF THE NEW  
TESTAMENT  
IN MODERN  
ENGLISH...

1





**The Mercier New Testament**  
A Version of the New Testament in Modern  
English



# THE MERCIER NEW TESTAMENT

A VERSION  
OF THE NEW  
TESTAMENT  
IN MODERN  
ENGLISH . . .

PART I : Matthew, Mark, Luke, John

PREPARED BY KEVIN CONDON

THE MERCIER PRESS · CORK

The idea of this book came from a German original: *Das Neue Testament für Menschen Unserer Zeit* (Quell-Verlag, Stuttgart 1964), the aim of which was to present the New Testament in the down-to-earth colloquial language of the people. The text of the German original could not be used in the preparation of this book, nor was any of the standard versions quite suited to the purpose envisaged here. A fresh translation from the Greek has been prepared, in plain, simple, modern language, and in a free-flowing style. The aim of the book is to show up the contrast between the ideal of the New Testament and the reality of the world around us. Therefore this is not meant to compete with the well-known standard English versions; if it leads to a greater use and appreciation of these its purpose will have been fulfilled. Each photograph is related to a text on the opposite page printed in bold. The headings are for the most part lines of poetry, ancient and modern, a circumstance that limits their appositeness. They are not résumés of the content of each passage but parallel evocations from the poets of a similar line of thought. So too, the division of the text envisages the human situation rather than the mind of the evangelists.

Original publication: *Das Neue Testament für Menschen Unserer Zeit*, Quell Verlag, Stuttgart 1964

© Kevin Condon 1970

Nihil Obstat: Jeremiah J. O'Sullivan, Censor deputatus. November 23, 1968

Imprimatur: Cornelius, Ep. Corcag & Ross, Jan. 30, 1970

Printed by Cahill & Co. Limited, Parkgate St., Dublin, Ireland

MATTHEW'S  
ACCOUNT



*From everlasting to everlasting*

This book tells the story of Jesus Christ.

By his family-tree Jesus was descended from King David, who  
was himself descended from the patriarch Abraham.

<sup>1, 1</sup>

*God is working his purpose out*

After Abraham came his son Isaac, the father of Jacob.

<sup>2</sup>

Jacob's sons were Juda and his brothers. Juda was followed by Perez and Zerah, their mother being Thamar, and Perez was the father of Hezron. Then came Ram, Amminidab, Nahshon, Salma, Boaz (whose mother was Rahab) and Obed, the son of Ruth.

<sup>3</sup>

<sup>4</sup>

There followed Jesse and his son, King David.

<sup>6</sup>

David was the father of Solomon (his mother having been the wife of Uriah) and then came Rehoboam, Abia, Asa, Jehoshaphat, Joram, Uzia, Jotham, Ahaz, Hiskia, Manasse, Amon, Josia.

Josia had several sons: Joiaquin and his brothers, at the time of the deportation to Babylon.

After the Babylonian deportation Shealtiel followed on Joiaquin. Then came Zerubbabel, Abiud, Eliakim, Azor, Zadok, Achim, Eliud, Eleazar, Matthan, Jacob.

<sup>12</sup>

Jacob was the father of Joseph, the husband of Mary; and Mary became the mother of Jesus who was known as the Christ.

<sup>16</sup>

Thus there were fourteen generations between Abraham and David, and fourteen generations between David and the Babylonian deportation, and fourteen generations between the Babylonian deportation and the coming of the Messiah.

*The silent God of time*

- 18 Jesus Christ was born in this way.  
When his mother Mary was engaged to Joseph and the couple had not yet begun to live together she was found to be expecting a child which was of the Holy Spirit.
- 19 Her husband Joseph, being a decent man, did not want to expose her and decided to divorce her in secret.
- 20 And while he was thinking on these lines an angel of the Lord appeared to him in a dream and said to him, "Joseph son of David do not be afraid to take Mary home as your wife, for
- 21 the child she is expecting is of the Holy Spirit. It will be a boy. You shall name him Jesus, because he will save his people from their sins."
- 22 All this took place to fulfil what God had said by the Prophet:
- 23 'A virgin will become a mother and will have a son, and his name will be called Emmanuel'  
—a name which means 'God is with us'.
- 24 On waking from his sleep Joseph did what the angel had told him; he took his wife home, but had no relations with her until her son was born. And he named the boy Jesus.

*For each age is a dream that is dying  
Or one that is coming to birth*

- 2, 1 Jesus was born at Bethlehem in Judaea, during the reign of King Herod. Now who should arrive in Jerusalem at this time but
- 2 wise men from the East, and they wanted to know, "Where is this boy who has been born King of the Jews? We have seen his star in the East and have come to pay him homage."

*Here's God down on us! What are you about?*

- 3 King Herod was very upset by this news, and the whole of Jerusalem as well.
- 4 So having assembled the priests and the doctors of the law, he asked them, "Where is the Messiah to be born?"

And they told him, "At Bethlehem of Judaea. For that is what 5  
stands written by the Prophet:

'You, Bethlehem, in the land of Juda,  
are by no means least among the chiefs of Juda;  
from you will emerge a leader,  
who will rule my people Israel.' " 6

Herod therefore summoned the wise men to a secret meeting 7  
and questioned them in detail about the time when the star  
appeared to them. Then he sped them on their way to Bethlehem 8  
and told them, "Go and find out all you can about this child.  
And when you have found him, send word back to me; I will  
come myself and pay him homage."

*The vision splendid*

With these instructions from the king, the wise men began their 9  
journey. And what happened! The same star they had seen in  
the East led their way, until it came to a halt over the place  
where the child lay, bringing them indescribable joy from the  
moment they saw it. So they entered the house and found the 11  
child with his mother Mary; and they fell on their knees and  
worshipped him. They opened their treasures and offered him  
gifts: gold, incense and precious salve.

And having been warned in a dream that they must not go back 12  
to Herod, they went home to their own country by a different  
road.

*Father and Mother and Child*

As soon as they had gone, the angel of the Lord appeared in a 13  
dream to Joseph and said, "Prepare at once to take the child and  
his mother and fly to Egypt; and stay there until I tell you. For  
Herod is determined to find the child and kill him."

So when he awoke Joseph took the child and his mother and left 14  
that night for Egypt. He remained there until Herod's death. 15  
Thus the word of the Lord spoken by the Prophet would come  
to pass: 'Out of Egypt I have called my son.'

*Out of the mouth of very babes, O God*

16 Presently Herod found that he had been tricked by the wise men and was very angry. He ordered the massacre of all the baby-boys in Bethlehem and the surrounding country, up to the age of two, calculating from the details given him by the wise men.

17 And so came to pass what had been said by the prophet Jeremia:

18 'A cry was heard in Rama, of lamentation and loud keening:  
Rachel weeping for her children, because they are no more;  
nor would she be consoled.'

*Here at the quiet limit of the world*

19 Then Herod died and the angel of the Lord again appeared in a dream to Joseph down in Egypt, and said to him, "Prepare at once to take the child and his mother and go to the land of Israel; for the people who wanted to kill him are dead."

21 So Joseph, on waking, took the child and his mother back to the land of Israel. But when he learned that Archelaus was reigning in Judaea on the throne of his father Herod, he was afraid to 23 go there. Being warned in a dream, he went to the country of Galilee and settled in a town called Nazareth. And this was to bring about what the prophets had foretold, that Jesus would be called a Nazarene.

*All ye, whose hopes rely  
On God, with me amidst these deserts mourn*

3, 1 At that time John the Baptist appeared, and began to preach in the desert country of Judaea. "Begin a new life," he said, "for the kingdom of God is upon you."

3 It was of John that the prophet Isaia had said,  
'Listen! A voice calls in the desert:  
Make ready the way of the Lord,  
make straight the path for his coming.'

4 And here was John himself; he wore a shirt of camel hair, tied at the waist with a leather belt, and lived on locusts and wild



MATTHEW 3

5 honey. All the people of Jerusalem and the whole of Judaea and the Jordan region went out to him.  
6 They confessed their sins and were baptized by him in the river Jordan.

*Against revolted multitudes the cause of truth*

7 John saw many of the Pharisees and the Sadducees (the leading parties of the time) coming to be baptized and said to them, "You brood of vipers! Who ever gave you to think that you will escape the coming anger of God?  
8 Show by your deeds the conversion of your hearts, and do not  
9 have the presumption to think: 'We can boast Abraham as father!' For I tell you that God can raise up children to Abraham  
10 from these stones. Already the axe is about to touch the root of the trees; any tree that does not produce good fruit will be cut down and thrown in the fire.  
11 I baptize you with water, as a token of repentance. But after me there comes one who is stronger than I, one whose shoes I am not worthy to carry; he will baptize you with the holy Spirit  
12 and with fire. His winnowing shovel is ready in his hand to purge out the chaff from his threshing-floor. The wheat he will gather into the barn; the chaff he will burn with unquenching fire."

*In the roll of the book it is written of me*

13 At this time Jesus moved from Galilee to the Jordan and came  
14 to John to be baptized. But John wanted to prevent him: "Why do you come to me?" he asked. "It is I who need to be baptized by you."  
15 And Jesus replied, "Let be. It is only fitting that we should do whatever God's will demands."  
So John yielded.

*For God of his gifts pour'd on him a full measure*

16 Jesus therefore was baptized; and the moment he came up from

the water the heavens were opened, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove and coming upon him. Then a voice from heaven said, "This is my beloved Son, whom I have chosen." 17

*Because he is at my right hand, I shall not be moved*

After this Jesus was led out to the desert by the Spirit, to be 4, 1 tempted by the devil. He had fasted for forty days and nights 2 and was hungry. And the tempter approached him and said, 3 "If you are God's Son, command these stones to become bread." Jesus replied, "It is written in Scripture: 'Not by bread alone 4 shall a man find life, but by every word that God speaks.'"

Then the devil brought him to the holy city and set him on the 5 parapet of the temple. He said to him, "If you are God's Son, 6 throw yourself down; for it is written in Scripture:

'He will command his angels  
to bear you in their arms,  
lest you strike your foot against a stone.' "

And Jesus replied, "It is also written in Scripture: 'You shall 7 not put the Lord your God to the test.' "

Once again the devil led him away, this time to a very high 8 mountain, and showed him all the kingdoms of the world and all their splendour. "I will give you the lot," he said, "if you 9 bow down and worship me."

But Jesus replied: "Away from me, Satan! It is written in Scripture: "The Lord your God you shall worship; him alone you shall serve.' "

Then the devil left him and angels came to serve him. 11

*Light breaks where no sun shines*

Having heard that John had been imprisoned, Jesus returned 12 to his own country of Galilee. But instead of staying at Nazareth 13 he came to live at Capharnaum, a town by the lake-side in the territory of Zabulon and Naphthali. And so the prophecy of 14 Isaia would come true:

15 'Land of Zabulon, land of Naphthali,  
on the road by the sea and over the Jordan,  
Galilee of the gentiles.  
16 The people who sat in darkness have seen a great light;  
for those who lived in a land of darkness and death, a light has  
risen.'

*I receive! I have been received!*

17 From then on Jesus began to proclaim his message in these  
words, "**Begin a new life, for the kingdom of God is upon you.**"  
18 One day he was walking by the lake of Galilee when he saw two  
men, Simon who was surnamed Peter and his brother Andrew,  
as they were working with a net on the lake; they were fishermen.  
19 Jesus said to them, "Be followers of mine and I will make you  
fishers of men."  
20 And they immediately abandoned their nets and followed him.  
21 Passing on from there he saw two others, James the son of  
Zebedee and his brother John, as they were fixing their nets in  
the boat with their father Zebedee. He called them.  
22 And they left the boat and their father on the spot, and followed  
him.

*Lord look down*

*On this thy world, defaced by usage vile*

23 Then Jesus began travelling round all Galilee. He taught in their  
synagogues, proclaimed the gospel of God's kingdom, and healed  
all kinds of disease and infirmity among the people.  
24 His name became known throughout the whole of Syria. People  
brought to him all who were sick or infirm; and whatever diseases  
or infirmities they suffered, whether disorders of the mind or  
crippling ailments of the body, Jesus healed them.  
25 People came from everywhere to follow him, from Galilee and  
the Ten Cities, from Jerusalem and Judaea, and from across the  
Jordan.

*All changed, changed utterly*

5, 1 So when he saw the crowds he went up the mountain. Then he  
sat down, his disciples gathered round, and he began to teach  
them.

OWNSTED ST. •





This is what he said:

“Blessed are those who know they are needy; for theirs is the 3 kingdom of God.

Blessed are those who suffer grief; for they shall be comforted. 4

Blessed are the gentle; for they shall inherit the land. 5

Blessed are those who hunger and thirst to do what is right; for 6 they shall be filled.

Blessed are the merciful; for they shall obtain mercy. 7

Blessed are the pure of heart; for they shall see God. 8

**Blessed are those who work for peace;** for they shall be called 9 God's children.

Blessed are those who suffer for doing what is right; for theirs is 10 the kingdom of God.

And blessed are you, if ever people insult you or persecute you 11 or slander you on my account. Be glad and rejoice, for a great 12 reward awaits you from God. That too was how they treated the Prophets before you.

*That Voice is round me like a bursting sea*

You are the salt of the earth. If salt becomes insipid, is there any 13 way of restoring its taste? It is good for nothing, except to be thrown out and trodden underfoot.

You are the light of the world. 14

A city built on a hill cannot be hid.

Nor do they light a lamp and place it under a bin; they set it 15 on a stand to shine for all in the house.

Therefore let your light shine before men; let them see your 16 good works and give honour to your Father in heaven.

*New-risen into life and liberty*

Do not think that I have come to abolish the law of Moses or the 17 writings of the Prophets. Not to abolish have I come, but to bring to completion. In God's name I tell you, heaven and earth 18 will pass away sooner than the smallest letter or stroke of the law will lose its force. Everything shall be brought to completion.

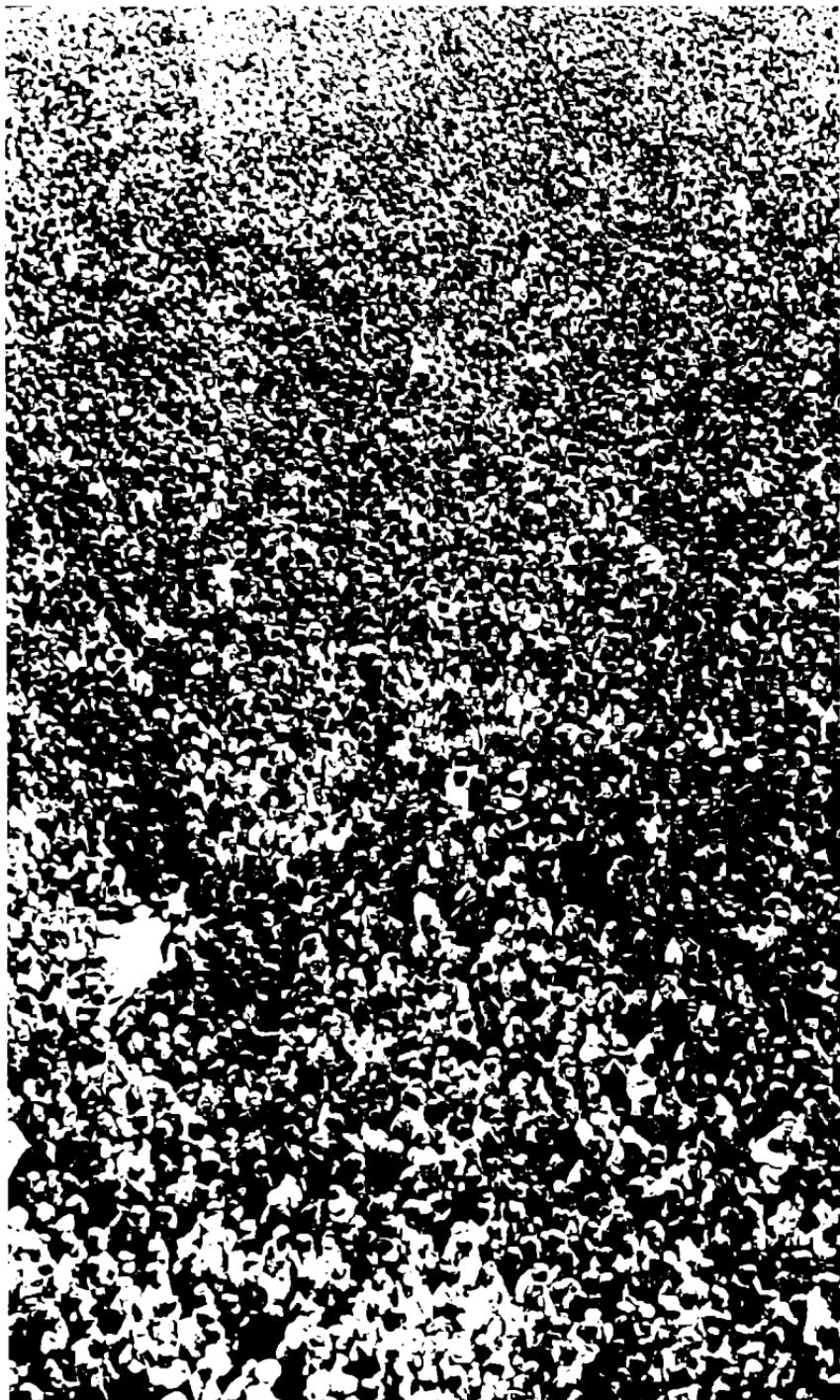
Therefore any man who sets aside even the least of these precepts 19 or teaches others to do so, will count for little in God's kingdom; but any man who observes them and teaches them will count a great deal in God's kingdom.

20 And I tell you this, if your obedience to God does not surpass that of the doctors of the law and the Pharisees, you shall not enter God's kingdom.

*Because the Spring is come into our land*

21 You know that it was given as a law to your ancestors, 'Do not kill; anyone who commits murder shall be liable to judgement'.  
22 But this is what I say: anyone who is angry with his fellow shall be liable to judgement; if he insults him he shall be liable to a greater judgement; and if he despises him, he shall be liable to everlasting rejection by God.  
23 If you are bringing an offering to God's altar and recall a griev-  
24 ance that your fellow-Christian has against you, leave your offering there on the spot, and go first to be reconciled with him. After that, you may come and offer your gift to God.  
25 Better always to make peace in a hurry with your accuser, while you are on the way to court; otherwise, your accuser will hand you over to the judge, and the judge will hand you over to the police, and the police will throw you in prison. In God's name I tell you, not till you have paid the last penny will you get out.  
27 You know that it was laid down, 'Do not commit adultery.'  
28 But this is what I say: If a man looks at another's wife, desiring her for himself, he has already committed adultery in his heart.  
29 Therefore, if your right eye is a danger to you, pluck it out and throw it away; better to lose one member than to be lost forever yourself.  
30 Or if your right hand is a danger to you, cut it off and throw it away; better to lose one member, than to be completely and forever rejected.  
31 The law was as follows, 'Any man who divorces his wife must certify her dismissal in writing.'  
32 But this is what I say: Any man who divorces his wife, apart from a matter of unchastity, causes her to commit adultery; and anyone who marries a divorced wife commits adultery.





You also know that it was formerly laid down, 'Do not swear 33  
falsely; fulfil the oaths you have sworn before God.'

But this is what I say: Do not swear at all. Do not swear by 34  
heaven, for it is God's throne; nor by earth, for it is his footstool; 35  
nor by Jerusalem, for it is the city of the great King. And do not 36  
swear by your head, since you have no power to make one hair  
white or black.

Speak the truth: 'yes' for 'yes', 'no' for 'no'. Anything beyond 37  
this is evil.

You know that it was the law: 'an eye for an eye and a tooth for 38  
a tooth'.

But this is what I say: do not set yourself against the man who 39  
wrongs you.

If a person strikes you on the right cheek, turn him the other as  
well.

If a person sues you for a coat, give him your overcoat as well. 40

If a person forces you to do a mile, do another as well. 41

Give to the one who asks of you, and do not turn away from the 42  
one who needs your help.

*That we may learn to bear the beams of love*

You know that it was the law: 'You shall love your neighbour 43  
and hate your enemy.'

But this is what I say: You shall love your enemies and pray for 44  
your persecutors, that you may be children of your Father in  
heaven. **For he makes his sun to rise on the bad as well as the 45  
good**, and gives his rain to the sinners as well as the saints.

If you love only those who love you, what reward do you deserve? 46  
Even criminals do the same.

If you greet only your brothers, what is special about it? 47  
Even sinners do as much.

Therefore be perfect, as your Father in heaven is perfect. 48

*And all for love and nothing for reward*

When you do works of charity, take care not to do them in public 6, 1  
so as be seen by men; otherwise no reward awaits you from your  
Father in heaven.

## MATTHEW 6

- 2 Sound no trumpets, therefore, when you are about to give charity, as the hypocrites do in the temples and the streets, so as to be lauded by men. Believe me, they have received their reward.
- 3 But when you give charity, your left hand must not know what
- 4 your right hand is doing; let your charity be hidden, and your Father who sees what is hidden will repay you.

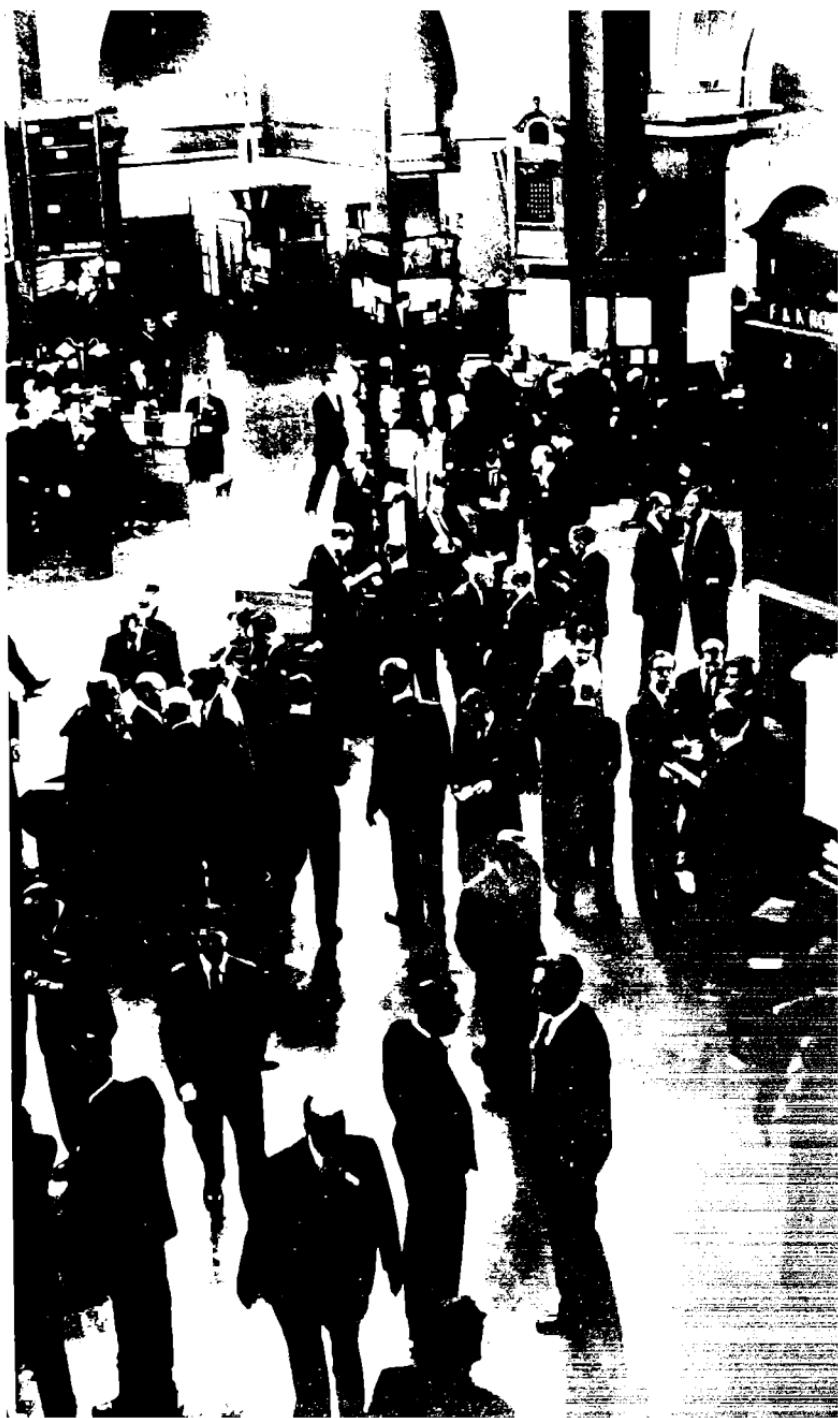
### *God's breath in man returning to his birth*

- 5 And when you pray, take care not to act like those hypocrites who stand around praying in the temples and at the corners of the streets, so as to be seen by men.  
Believe me, they have received their reward.
- 6 Whenever you pray, go into your room, and close the door, and **pray to your Father in secret**; for your Father sees what is secret, and he will reward you.
- 7 And do not babble at length when you pray, like the pagans, who think that to be heard they have to speak many words.
- 8 With you it is different; for your Father knows what you need, even before you ask for it.

### *The soul in paraphrase, heart in pilgrimage*

- 9 This is how you should pray:  
Our Father in heaven,  
let your holy name be known,
- 10 let your kingdom come,  
and your will be done,  
on earth as in heaven.
- 11 Give us today the bread that we need,
- 12 and forgive us our wrongs,  
as we forgive those  
who have done wrong to us.
- 13 Do not lead us into trial,  
but save us from the evil.
- 14 If you forgive others the wrongs they have done, your Father in heaven will forgive you.





But if you do not forgive others, neither will your Father forgive 15  
you.

*Dead perfection—no more?*

When you fast, do not act like the hypocrites who put on gloomy 16  
looks and downcast faces, to let others see that they are fasting.  
Believe me, they have received their reward.

Whenever you fast, freshen yourself up and put on a cheerful 17  
face. Others may not see that you are fasting, but your Father 18  
who is hidden will; for he sees what is hidden, and he will reward  
you.

*Getting and spending we lay waste our powers*

Gather no riches on earth, where moth and rust destroy, and 19  
thieves break in and steal. Gather riches with God, where moth 20  
and rust do not destroy, nor thieves break in and steal.

Wherever your riches are, there your heart will be. 21

The eye gives light to the body. If the eye is clear, the whole 22  
body is lighted; but if the eye is evil, the whole body is in dark- 23  
ness. And if this light within you is in darkness, how dark is  
your night!

No man can serve two masters; he will either hate the one and 24  
like the other, or take to the one and detest the other.

**You cannot serve God and money.**

*Love God! Begin to repose yourself on Him*

I tell you, therefore, do not burden your life with anxiety over 25  
food, or drink, or clothing.

Is not life more important than nourishment, and the body more  
important than clothing?

Take a lesson from the birds of the sky. They neither sow nor reap 26  
nor gather a store; and yet, your Father in heaven takes care of  
them.

Are you not much more important than the birds?

Can any one of you extend the span of his life, no matter how 27  
much he worries about it?

MATTHEW 6/7

28 Or why worry about clothing? Learn from the lilies of the field, how they grow, without having to toil or make themselves clothes.

29 And yet, I tell you, **not even Solomon in all his glory was dressed like one of them.**

30 If this is how God looks after the grass of the field, which is here today and gone tomorrow, how much more will he look after you—for all your want of faith!

31 Do not worry therefore: what are we to eat? what are we to drink? where are we to get clothes? These are the worries of pagan people.

32 But your Father in heaven knows that you need all these things.

33 Set your hearts first of all on the kingdom, and whatever he demands.

The rest will all be looked after by God.

34 Have no worry then about tomorrow; tomorrow will look after itself.

Each day has enough trouble of its own.

*That my heart may be greater within me*

7, 1 Do not judge others, if you do not want to be judged yourselves.

2 As you judge others, so you will be judged; the measure you give will be the measure you will receive.

3 How can you see the speck in your neighbour's eye, if you do

4 not see the spot in your own? Or how can you say to your brother: let me take that speck out of your eye, when there's a blind spot in your own?

5 Do not deceive yourself. First remove the spot from your own eye, and then you'll be in a position to remove the speck from your brother's eye.

6 Holy things are not to be thrown to dogs, nor pearls to swine, lest they trample them in the mud, and then turn and tear you to pieces.

*Where ask is have, where seek is find,  
Where knock is open wide*

7 Ask and God will give to you.



MATTHEW 7

Seek and you will find.

Knock and you will be given entry.

8 The one who asks receives.

The one who seeks finds.

The one who knocks is given entry.

9 Suppose one of your children asks for bread, do you give him a

11 stone? Or if he asks for a fish, do you give him a snake? And if you, although you're not saints, can give good things to your children, how much more will your Father in heaven give good things to those who ask him.

*The golden rule*

12 Therefore, let this be your rule: Treat others as you would like others to treat you.

For the whole of the law and the Prophets is summed up in this rule.

*This is the gate of the Lord, the righteous shall enter through it*

13 Enter by the narrow gate; for the gate is wide and the road is broad that leads to perdition.

There are many who take it.

14 But narrow is the gate and difficult the road that leads to life. And few find it.

*Surviving man betrays with deeds and words*

15 Watch out for false prophets; they come with the gentleness of

16 sheep, but with the mind of ravenous wolves. You will know them by their fruits.

Are grapes picked from hawthorns? Or figs from brambles?

17 A good tree always produces good fruit, and a bad tree bad

18 fruit; for a good tree cannot produce bad fruit, nor a bad tree

19 good fruit. And any tree that does not yield a good crop will be cut down and burnt.

20 Therefore you will know them by their fruits.

*O Lord, who shall sojourn in thy tent?*

21 It is not the man who says to me, 'Lord, Lord', that will enter

the kingdom of God, but the man who does the will of my Father in heaven.

On that last day many will say, 'Lord have we not spoken prophecy in your name? Have we not driven out demons, and worked many miracles in your name?' 22

And I will tell them to their faces, 'I have never known you. Go away from me, you doers of evil!' 23

*A forted residence 'gainst the tooth of time*

Anyone therefore who hears my words, and acts on them, will be 24 like a thoughtful man who built his house on rock; when the 25 clouds burst and the floods came and the winds blew and beat upon that house, it did not fall, because it had a foundation of rock.

But anyone who hears my words, and does not act on them, will 26 be like a foolish man who built his house on sand; when the 27 clouds burst and the floods came and the winds blew and beat upon that house, it fell and crumbled in a great crash."

*But eies, and eares, and ew'ry thought,  
Were with his sweete perfection caught*

When Jesus had finished this sermon the people were amazed 28 at his teaching. Unlike their own doctors of the law, he taught 29 them as one with authority.

*God's finger touched him*

Jesus then came down from the mountain and was followed by 8, 1 a large crowd of people. And a leper came to him and said, as 2 he fell at his feet, "Sir, if only you will, you can cleanse me of my disease."

Jesus reached out his hand and touched him. "Yes, I will," he 3 said. "Be cleansed." And the man was immediately cleansed of his leprosy.

Jesus warned him not to tell anyone. "But go," he said, "and 4 show yourself to the priest. Bring the offering prescribed by Moses, so that your cure may be certified."

*Lord I am not worthy, but speak the word only*

5 As soon as he had arrived in Capharnaum an army officer  
6 approached him and said, "Sir, my servant is lying crippled in  
bed at home and in great pain."  
7 Jesus replied, "I will come and heal him."  
8 And the officer said, "I am not worthy, sir, to have you enter  
my house. But you need only to say the word and my servant  
9 will be healed. I myself belong to the service and have soldiers  
under me; if I tell one to go, he goes; if I tell one to come, he  
comes; and if I say to my servant 'do this', he does it."  
10 Jesus was amazed, and said to the people with him, "Believe me,  
such faith I have not found from anyone in Israel.  
11 I assure you, **many will come from the east and west**, and  
will sit at table with Abraham and Isaac and Jacob in the kingdom  
12 of God. But the people of the kingdom will be banished to the  
darkness outside; and there, I tell you, will be the wailing and  
anguish of remorse!"  
13 He turned to the army officer and said, "Go home. As your faith  
has been, so let it be done."  
And at the same moment his servant was healed.

*Christ of his gentleness*

14 Jesus went to Peter's house and found Peter's mother-in-law in  
15 bed with fever. He took hold of her hand and the fever left her;  
and she got up and began to serve him.  
16 In the cool of the evening many were brought to him suffering  
from possession; he drove out the demons with a word, and  
healed all the sick.  
17 And so the saying of Isaia the Prophet came true: 'He took away  
our sicknesses and bore our infirmities.'

*Life's business being just the terrible choice*

18 Finding himself surrounded by a large crowd, Jesus gave com-  
mand to cross over to the other shore.  
19 And a doctor of the law came up and said, "Master, I will follow  
you wherever you go."





Jesus replied, "The foxes have dens and the birds of the sky have 20 nests, but the Son of Man has nowhere to lay his head."

Another who belonged to the disciples said to him, "Sir, allow 21 me first to go and bury my father."

And Jesus replied, "Follow me. Let the dead bury their dead." 22

*O Saviour of those who seek refuge*

After he had embarked in the boat along with his disciples a 23 great storm suddenly came down on the lake, so that the boat was almost swallowed by the waves. But Jesus was asleep.

The disciples came to waken him and said, "Lord, save us! We're 25 going down!"

And he replied, "Why this fear? Have you so little faith?" 26

Then he got up, commanded the winds and the waters, and there came a great calm.

And the men were astounded and asked themselves, "What kind 27 of man is this? Even the winds and the waves obey him!"

*Thy God, thy life, thy cure*

When he arrived at the opposite shore, in the country of the 28 Gadarenes, two possessed men came out from the tombs to meet him; they were bad cases, so violent that nobody could travel that road in peace.

They called out to him, "Son of God, what do you want from 29 us? Have you come to torment us before the time?"

At some distance from them a large herd of pigs was feeding; and 30 the demons begged of Jesus, "If you drive us out, send us into the herd of pigs."

"Go out!" he replied. 32

So the demons came out from the two men and took possession of the pigs; and the whole herd rushed down the slope into the lake and perished in the water.

The herdsmen took to their heels and went off into the town, 33 where they reported the whole story about the possessed men.

And the whole town then came out to meet Jesus; when they 34 saw him they asked him to leave their country.

*That the man I am may cease to be*

9, 1 Jesus therefore got into a boat and having crossed over came to  
2 his own town, Capharnaum. Here they brought him a cripple,  
who lay helpless on a stretcher. And Jesus, struck by their faith,  
said to the cripple, "Courage, son, your sins are forgiven."  
3 Now there happened to be some doctors of the law in the com-  
pany, who said to themselves, "This man is talking blasphemy!"  
4 But Jesus knew their minds and asked, "Why do you have these  
5 wicked thoughts? Do you think it is easier to say, 'your sins are  
6 forgiven' than to say, 'stand up and walk'? But I will let you  
see that the Son of Man has power on earth to forgive sins."  
So he turned to the cripple and said, "Stand up, take your bed,  
and go home."  
7 And the cripple got up and went home to his house.  
8 The people who saw it all felt a strange fear and praised God for  
giving such power to men.

*The lost days of my life until today*

9 Jesus passed on from there and saw a man sitting at the tax-office  
whose name was Matthew.  
"Come with me," he said to him.  
And Matthew at once packed up and went with him.  
10 Later on he was at dinner in the house and many tax-collectors  
and outcast people came and sat down to the meal with Jesus  
and his disciples.  
11 The Pharisees saw this and said to his disciples, "Why does  
your Master dine with these tax-collectors and other riff-raff?"  
12 But Jesus was listening and said, "It is not the healthy who need  
13 the doctor, but the sick. Go and learn what is meant by the  
Scripture where it says, 'I desire mercy, and not sacrificial  
offerings.'  
**I have not come to call the pious but men who are estranged  
from God."**

*A new knowledge of reality*

14 At this time some of John's disciples came to him and asked,  
"How is it that we and the Pharisees fast, but not your disciples?"





And he replied, "Do you think that wedding-guests can go 15 mourning while the bridegroom is with them? But days will come when the bridegroom will be taken from them; and that will be the time for them to fast.

*Our little systems have their day*

No one sews a patch of unshrunk cloth on an old coat, or the 16 patch will shrink and tear the coat, so that a bigger hole is made. And no one pours new wine into old wine-skins, or the skins 17 will burst, so that both wine and skins are lost; **new wine is poured into new skins**, so that both wine and skins are saved."

*Everything that lives  
Lives not alone, nor for itself*

As Jesus was speaking to them, a magistrate came up and bowed 18 to him respectfully. "My daughter has just died," he said. "Please come and lay a hand upon her, and she will live again." Jesus got up and went with him, accompanied by his disciples. 19 Now there was also a woman who for twelve years had suffered 20 from bleeding; she came up behind and touched the fringe of his cloak, saying to herself, "If I only touch his cloak I shall be 21 healed." But Jesus turned round and saw her. "Courage, daughter," he 22 said, "your faith has saved you." And from that moment the woman was healed.

*Can I see another's woe  
And not be in sorrow too?*

When he came to the magistrate's house he found flute-players 23 there and a large crowd wailing the dead girl. "Go home," he said to them. "The girl is not dead but asleep." 24 And they laughed at him. Then the crowd was put out from the house. Jesus entered the 25 room, took the girl by the hand, and she was restored to life. And the news of it spread all over the country. 26

27 As he moved on from there two blind men followed him, crying out, "Son of David, have pity on us".

28 When he entered the house the two came to him; and he asked them, "Do you believe that I can do what you want?" "Yes, sir," they replied.

29 Then he touched their eyes and said, "In so far as you have faith, so let it be done."

30 And the blind men received their sight. He gave them a strict warning: "Be sure not to tell anyone about it."

31 But they went off and spread news of him all over the country.

32 Just as they were going away a dumb man afflicted by an evil spirit was brought to him; the spirit was driven out and the dumb man began to speak. And the crowds exclaimed in astonishment, "Never has the like been seen in Israel!"

34 But the Pharisees said, "It's from the prince of demons that he gets power to drive out demons."

—*All ye that labour, come to Me, and rest—*

35 Jesus travelled round all their towns and villages, taught in their meeting-houses, proclaimed the gospel of the kingdom, and healed every disease and infirmity.

36 The sight of the multitudes moved him to pity; they were harassed and helpless, like sheep without a shepherd.

37 And he said to his disciples, "How great is the harvest to be reaped, and how few the workers. You must pray the Lord of the harvest to send workers to reap his crop."

*World-losers and world-forsakers*

10, 1 He summoned his twelve disciples and gave them power to drive out evil spirits and to heal all diseases and infirmities.

2 And the names of the twelve apostles are as follows: Simon first, who was called Peter, and his brother Andrew; then James the son of Zebedee, and his brother John;

3 then Philip and Bartholomew;

Thomas and Matthew, who had been a tax-collector;  
 James, the son of Alphaeus, and Thaddaeus;  
 Simon the Zealot, and Judas Iscariot who later betrayed him. 4

*Yet we are the movers and shakers*

He sent these twelve out on a mission and instructed them as 5 follows: "You are not to go to the foreign peoples, nor to any 6 town of Samaria, but to the lost sheep of the house of Israel. And 7 as you go your way let this be your message: 'God's kingdom has drawn near'. Heal the sick, raise the dead, cure the lepers, 8 drive out the demons. Having received at no cost, you must give 9 service without charge; therefore earn no gold, nor silver, nor copper, to put in your belts. And carry no knapsack for the 10 journey, nor more than one shirt, nor sandals, nor a walking-stick; for any man who works deserves his keep.

On coming to a town or a village, look for a citizen who is worthy, 11 and stay with him until you leave again. And when you enter a 12 house bring a greeting with you. If the people are worthy, let 13 your peace be with them; if they are not worthy, let it return to you. And if anyone refuses to receive you or to listen to you, 14 depart from that house or that town and shake the dust of it from your feet.

Believe me, on the day of judgement Sodom and Gomorrah will 15 get off more lightly than that town.

*How very hard it is to be a Christian!*

I send you now as sheep among wolves. 16

Therefore be wary as serpents, and be innocent as doves.

You must also guard against men; for they will hand you over 17 to courts and have you flogged in their synagogues. You will be 18 brought before governors and kings on my account, as witnesses before them and the foreign peoples.

When you are led away, do not be anxious about what you will 19 say in your speech. For when the moment comes, you will be 20 inspired what to say; it will not be you who will be speaking, but the Spirit of your Father who will be speaking through you. Brother will surrender brother to death, and a father his child; 21

even children will rise against their parents and send them to death.

22 You will be hated by all men on my account; but the man who holds out to the end will be saved.

23 If they hunt you down in one town, take refuge in another; for I tell you this: you will not have completed the towns of Israel before the Son of Man comes.

24 A disciple does not stand above his master, nor a servant above his lord; the disciple must be satisfied to go the way of his master, and the servant the way of his lord.

If they have deemed the householder an agent of Satan, how much more will they malign his household!

*Speak no evil of the soul,  
Nor think that body is the whole.*

26 Do not fear them therefore. Nothing is covered up, that will not be disclosed; or hidden away, that will not be revealed. What I say to you under cover, tell it in the open day; what is whispered in your ear, proclaim it aloud from the house-tops.

28 Have no fear of those who may kill the body, but cannot kill the spirit; fear rather the one who can destroy in hell both body and spirit.

29 Are not a couple of sparrows sold for a few pence? And yet not a single one of them falls to the ground without your Father's leave.

30 As for you, even the hairs of your head are all numbered. **Have no fear therefore; you count more than all the sparrows.**

32 If anyone declares for me before men, I will declare for him before my Father in heaven; if anyone disowns me before men, I will disown him before my Father in heaven.

*The Christian paradox, bringing its great reward  
By loss*

34 Do not think that I have come to bring peace on earth. No, not



35 peace but the sword. I have come to separate a man from his father, a daughter from her mother, a daughter-in-law from her mother-in-law; and a man's enemies will be the people of his own house.

37 Whoever loves father or mother more than me is not worthy of me; whoever loves son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me; whoever does not take up his cross and follow me is not worthy of me.

39 Whoever has found his life will lose it; whoever loses his life for my sake will find it.

*Familiar acts are beautiful through love*

40 Whoever receives you receives me; and whoever receives me receives the one who sent me.

41 Whoever receives a prophet, on the ground that he is a prophet, will get the reward of a prophet.  
Whoever receives a good man, on the ground that he is a good man, will get the reward of a good man.

42 And whoever gives a cup of fresh water to one of these little ones, on the ground that he is a disciple of mine—in God's name I tell you, he shall not go unrewarded.”

11, 1 When he had finished instructing his twelve disciples Jesus departed from there to teach and proclaim the gospel in their towns.

*A vision lit  
With mighty prophecies*

2 Now John the Baptist got news in prison of what Christ was doing; so he sent some of his disciples to ask him, “Are you the one who is to come, or must we wait for someone else?”

4 Jesus replied, “Go back and tell John what you hear and see: 5 how the blind get their sight, and the lame walk, and the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, and the dead are raised to life, and the poor have the gospel preached to them.

6 And well for the man who does not go wrong because of me.”

*The last and greatest herald of Heaven's King*

While they were on their way, Jesus began to speak to the crowds 7  
about John:

"What brought you out to the desert? To see a reed shaken by  
the wind? Was that it?

Or what brought you out? To see someone dressed in soft 8  
garments?

But the people who dress in soft garments belong to royal  
palaces.

Why then did you go out? To see a prophet?

Yes, I tell you, and more than a prophet. John is the one of 9  
whom Scripture says: 'I am sending my messenger ahead of you,  
to prepare the way before you.'

Believe me, among all men born of woman no one greater has 11  
arisen than John the Baptist; and yet, the least person in God's  
kingdom is greater than he.

From the days of John the Baptist until now the kingdom of 12  
God has been storming in, and men of violence carry it away.

The prophets and the law all prophesied until Jolin; he is the 13  
Elia whose coming was promised, if you are prepared to accept it.

And any man who has ears should use them. 15

*We are the hollow men*

*We are the stuffed men*

What example can I give of the present generation? The people 16  
of today are like children sitting in the streets and calling out to 17  
their playmates: 'We played you a hornpipe and you wouldn't  
dance; we keened the dead and you wouldn't mourn.'

John came, neither eating nor drinking, and they say, 'he is mad'. 18  
The Son of Man comes, an eater and a drinker, and they say, 19  
'here's a glutton, a tippler, a friend of tax-collectors and their  
ilk.'

And God's wisdom has been proved right by what she has  
accomplished."

*Look at it well. This was the good town once*

After that Jesus began to reproach the towns where most of his 20

miracles had taken place, because they had not been converted:

21 "Woe to you Chorazin," he said, "and woe to you Bethsaida! If the miracles worked among you had been worked in Tyre and Sidon, they would have long ago mourned for their sins and repented.

22 I tell you this: On the day of judgement Tyre and Sidon will get off more lightly than you.

23 And you Capharnaum? Will you be lifted up to heaven? You shall be brought down to hell! If the same miracles had been worked for the people of Sodom as have been worked for you, Sodom would be there to this day.

24 I tell you this: On the day of judgement the land of Sodom will get off more lightly than you."

*Lead, Kindly Light, amid the encircling gloom*

25 On that occasion Jesus confessed to his Father, "I thank you, Father, Lord of heaven and earth; you have hidden these things from the wise and the learned, and have revealed them to simple folk. Yes, Father, such was your pleasure.

26 All things have been committed to me by my Father. No one knows the Son except the Father; no one knows the Father except the Son, and those to whom the Son chooses to reveal him.

28 **Come to me, all you people wearied by your heavy burden, and**

29 I will give you rest. Bow yourselves to my yoke and learn of me, for I am kind and humble; and you will find peace in your lives.

30 My yoke is gentle, my burden light."

*Christ with his lamp of truth*

12, 1 At this time Jesus once passed through wheat-fields on a sabbath-day; and the disciples, being hungry, began to pluck ears of wheat and eat them.

2 But the Pharisees saw it and said to him, "Look, your disciples are doing what is forbidden on the sabbath."

3 And he replied, "Are you not forgetting what David did when

4 he and his companions were hungry? How he entered the temple



of God and ate the holy bread laid out there which neither he nor his companions had any right to eat, but only the priests.

5 Or again, have you not read in the Scripture that the priests in the temple have a right to profane the sabbath, without being blamed for it?

6 I tell you, here stands one that is greater than the temple.

7 If you knew the meaning of the words, 'I desire mercy, and not sacrificial offerings', you would not be so quick to condemn innocent people.

8 For the Son of Man is Lord of the sabbath."

*His pity gave ere charity began*

9 Moving on from there, he came to their synagogue, where there happened to be a man with a shrivelled hand.

10 And they asked him straight, "Is it permitted to heal on the sabbath?" For they wanted to bring a charge against him.

11 Jesus replied, "Suppose one of you has a sheep and it falls into a pit on the sabbath, will he not get hold of it and pull it out?

12 But how much more does a man count than a sheep! So it follows that a good deed is allowed on the sabbath."

13 He then said to the man, "Put out your hand." And the moment he put it out, his hand became as sound as the other.

14 But the Pharisees went out and held a meeting to see how they would destroy him.

*God's silent servant*

15 On hearing of this, Jesus went away from that place and was followed by many people; he healed them all, but gave them strict warning not to make him known.

16 And so the words of Isaia the Prophet were to come true:

18 'Here is my Servant, whom I have chosen, my beloved, on whom my favour rests. I will put my Spirit upon him, and he will proclaim right to the nations.

19 He will not contend or shout; his voice will not be heard in the streets.

The broken reed he will not crush,  
the smouldering wick he will not quench,  
until he makes right triumphant,  
and the nations pin their hopes in him.'

20

21

*We see Him come, and know Him ours*

A possessed man was brought to him who was blind and dumb. 22  
And Jesus healed the dumb man, so that he could again speak  
and see.

The crowds were beside themselves with excitement. "Surely 23  
this must be the Son of David," they said.

But the Pharisees, hearing it, remarked, "This man has no power 24  
over demons, or if he has, it's from the prince of demons him-  
self."

Jesus however knew their minds and said to them, "A kingdom 25  
divided against itself loses its strength; and a city or a house  
divided against itself has no future.

If it is Satan who drives out Satan, then Satan is divided; and 26  
what future has his kingdom?

And if my power over demons is from the prince of demons, 27  
from whom do your own people get their power? Therefore they  
shall be your judges.

But if I drive out demons by the power of God's Spirit, then the 28  
kingdom of God has already come upon you.

Or is it possible to enter a strong man's house and plunder his 29  
property, without first tying up the strong man? Only then can  
one plunder his house.

The man who is not with me is against me; the man who does 30  
not gather with me scatters.

*And for this sin there is no remedy*

I tell you this: there is no sin, no slander, for which men will 31  
not be forgiven, except slander against the Spirit.

One who speaks against the Son of Man may yet be forgiven; 32

but the person who speaks against the Holy Spirit will never be forgiven—neither in this world nor in the world to come.

*Hatred and cark and care, what place have they?*

- 33 Either take the tree to be sound, and the fruit also will be sound; or take it to be bad, and the fruit also will be bad. It is the fruit that shows the tree.
- 34 You brood of vipers! How can you speak good words, when you are evil yourselves? For the mouth only speaks the thoughts that fill the heart.
- 35 A good man produces what is good from his store of goodness; and an evil man what is evil from his store of evil.

*But if we let our tongues lose self-possession*

- 36 Believe me, on the day of judgement men shall answer for every thoughtless word they shall speak.
- 37 **By your words you will be acquitted; or by your words you will be condemned.”**

*No Light, but rather darkness visible*

- 38 Some doctors of the law and Pharisees said to him on that occasion, “Master, we want to see some sign from you as a proof.”
- 39 And he replied, “So this evil and unfaithful generation wants a sign! But no sign will be given it, except the sign of the prophet Jona.
- 40 As Jona spent three days and three nights in the belly of the monster, so too the Son of Man will spend three days and three nights in the heart of the earth.
- 41 On the day of judgement the people of Niniveh will rise with the people of this generation, and will speak judgement against them; for they were converted at the preaching of Jona.  
And here stands one that is greater than Jona.
- 42 On the day of judgement the Queen of the south will rise with the people of this generation, and will speak judgement against them;





for she came from the ends of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon.

And here stands one that is greater than Solomon.

*Passing from deception to deception  
From grandeur to grandeur to final illusion*

When an unclean spirit goes out from a person it scours the 43 waterless desert looking for a place to rest, and does not find it. So it says, 'I will go back to my house which I left.' And on going 44 back it finds it still vacant, and everything swept and tidy. Then it sets out and picks up seven other spirits more evil than 45 itself, and they all enter and take up residence there, so that the man's plight is worse at the end than it was at the start. That, too, is how it will be for the people of this generation."

*With the eyes of God*

While he was speaking to the people it happened that his mother 46 and brothers came and stood outside, wanting to have a word with him.

Somebody brought him the message: "Look, your mother and 47 your brothers are outside and want to have a word with you." And he replied, "Who is my mother? And who are my brothers?" 48 He pointed a hand towards his disciples, and said, "Here are 49 my mother and my brothers! Anyone who obeys the will of my 50 Father in heaven is my brother, my sister, my mother."

*Soft words of grace he spoke*

On the same day Jesus left the house and sat by the shore of 13, 1 the lake. A very large crowd of people gathered round him; so he got into a boat and sat in it, while all the people stood along 2 the lake-side.

And he spoke to them at length in parables.

3

*O be swift, my soul, to answer him!*

He said, "A farmer once went out to sow seed. And as he 4

scattered the seed, some fell on the path; and the birds came and ate it up.

- 5 Some seed fell on stony ground where it did not have much soil;
- 6 and not being very deep it sprouted quickly. Then the sun came up and it was scorched; and because it had no roots it withered.
- 7 Some seed fell among briars; but the briars shot up and choked the seed.
- 8 And some seed fell on good soil and produced a crop, increasing up to a hundred or sixty or thirty times.
- 9 If anyone has ears, let him use them."

*Refuse to listen and you will no longer hear*

- 10 Afterwards the disciples came to Jesus and wanted to know, "Why do you speak to them in parables?"
- 11 And he replied, "Because you have been given to know the secrets of the kingdom of God; but the others have not been given this grace.
- 12 When a man already has something, he will be given more, and plenty of it.  
When a man has nothing, even the little he has will be taken from him.
- 13 If I speak to them in parables, it is because they look but do not see, and hear but do not understand. For them, therefore, the prophecy of Isaia has come true:  
'You shall hear and listen, but not understand;  
You shall look and see, but not perceive.'
- 15 For the mind of this people has been blunted;  
their ears have been made deaf,  
and their eyes have been made dim;  
they shall not see with their eyes,  
or hear with their ears,  
or understand with their minds;  
they shall not be converted,  
and I shall not heal them.'
- 16 **But blessed are your eyes, in that they see; and blessed are your ears, in that they hear.** Believe me, many prophets and many



saints have longed to see what you see, but have not seen it; and have wanted to hear what you hear, but have not heard it.

*God comes down in the rain  
And the crop grows tall*

- 18 Let you, therefore, listen to what is meant by the parable of the
- 19 sower: Some people hear the word of God's kingdom but do not take it to heart, because the devil comes and snatches away what has been sown in them; these are the type represented by the seed that falls on the path.
- 20 The seed that falls on the stony ground stands for others, who
- 21 hear the word and immediately receive it with joy. With these, however, the seed takes no root and is short-lived; when trouble comes, or any kind of trial on account of the word, this type immediately falls away.
- 22 Others again are represented by the seed that falls among the briars; these listen to the word, but worldly interests and the lure of wealth choke the word so that it produces no fruit.
- 23 Then there is the seed that falls on the good soil; it stands for those who hear the word and take it to heart, and go on to produce a rich harvest indeed."

*At the end a reckoning*

- 24 He told them another story:  
"God's kingdom may be compared to a farmer who sowed good seed in his field. But while the people were asleep an enemy came who sowed weeds all through the wheat and went off.
- 26 When the baird grew up and sprouted, then the weeds appeared as well.
- 27 So the farmer's men came and said to him, 'Sir, didn't you sow good seed in your field? Where have the weeds come from?'
- 28 'Some enemy has done this,' replied the farmer.  
And the men asked him, 'Do you want us to go and gather up the weeds?'
- 29 But he said, 'No. If you gather the weeds you run the risk of
- 30 plucking up the wheat as well. Let both grow together until harvest-time; I'll see that the reapers gather the weeds first,

and tie them in bundles for burning, and afterwards gather the wheat into my barn.' "

*And new horizons calling*

Jesus went on to tell another story:

31

"The kingdom of God is like a mustard-seed which a man sowed in his field. This is the smallest of all the seeds, but when it has grown is bigger than any plant of the garden; it even becomes a tree, so that the birds of the sky can come and roost in its branches."

32

And another story:

33

"The kingdom of God is like a fermenting yeast which a woman has mixed into three large measures of flour, until the whole cake becomes fermented."

*Human kind cannot bear very much reality*

All these things Jesus told the people by means of stories or parables; apart from this, he gave them no instruction.

34

And the word of God spoken by the prophet thus came true: 35  
'I will speak in parables;  
I will utter age-old secrets.'

*O great, just, good God! Miserable me!*

Jesus then dismissed the crowds and went home. And the 36  
disciples came to him and said, "Explain for us the story of the  
weeds in the tillage."

He replied, "The sower of the good seed is the Son of Man. 37  
The field in which it is sowed is the world. The good seed stands 38  
for the men of the kingdom, the weeds for the agents of evil.  
The enemy who sowed the weeds stands for the devil, the 39  
harvest for the end of the world, and the reapers for the angels.  
Just as weeds are gathered up and burnt, so shall it be at the end 40  
of the world. The Son of Man will send out his angels. They 41  
will gather out of his kingdom all the agents of corruption and  
evil and cast them into hell; and there, I tell you, will be the 42  
wailing and anguish of remorse!"

MATTHEW 13

43 After that the saints will shine like the sun in their Father's kingdom.  
Whoever has ears, let him listen.

*I have no good apart from thee*

44 The kingdom of God is like a man finding a treasure buried in a field; he hides it away himself, and then—so great is his joy—he goes and sells all his property in order to buy that field.  
45 Or again, the kingdom of God is like a dealer who is looking for pearls of quality; when he discovers a really valuable one, he goes and sells all his property in order to buy that pearl.

*He will judge the world with righteousness*

47 Again, God's kingdom is like a great drag-net cast into the sea, 48 which catches all kinds of fish. When it is full it is hauled ashore; and the men sit down to pick out the good fish into a vessel, **and throw away the bad.**  
49 That is how it will be at the end of the world. The angels will go 50 out and separate the wicked from the good and will cast them into hell; and there, I tell you, will be the wailing and anguish of remorse!  
51 Have you understood all this?"  
"Yes," they replied.  
52 And Jesus said to them, "It follows that any man who is schooled in God's word and well instructed about the kingdom is like a householder who can draw on his store of wisdom for new stuff or old."

*It takes life to love life*

53 Having finished his parables Jesus departed from there.  
54 He came to his own town and taught his townsmen in their synagogue.  
But they were completely baffled. "Where does he get all the 55 learning?" they began to ask. "And these miracles? Isn't he the son of the carpenter? Don't we know his mother Mary and his 56 brothers, James and Joseph, Simon and Jude? His sisters too—



aren't they all neighbours of ours? Where can he have picked up all this?"

57 So they took offence at him.

And Jesus said to them, "Nowhere is a prophet more despised than in his own town, and among his own people."

58 He worked only a few miracles there, because they had no faith.

*In this land of unbelief and fear*

14, 1 At this time rumours about Jesus came to Herod, the ruler of 2 the province. He said to his men, "This is John the Baptist; the man has been brought to life! That is why these miraculous powers are working in him."

*With dark deliberate intent*

3 Herod had previously arrested John and thrown him in prison in chains, on account of Herodias, his brother Philip's wife. 4 For John used to say to Herod, "It's wrong for you to keep her." 5 And Herod would have liked to kill him; but he feared the people, because they looked on John as a prophet. 6 However, when Herod's birthday was being celebrated, the daughter of Herodias danced before all the guests and pleased 7 the king so much that he swore a solemn oath to give her anything 8 she asked. And the girl, prompted by her mother, said to him, "Give me here on a dish the head of John the Baptist." 9 At this the king was saddened; but he had sworn an oath in the presence of his guests, so he ordered that her request should be granted. 10 He sent to have John beheaded in prison. The head was brought in on a dish and given to the girl; and the girl brought it to her mother. 11 Then his disciples came and took away his body for burial; and they brought the news to Jesus.

*O cut for me life's bread, for me pour wine*

13 When Jesus heard this, he went away in a boat by himself to a deserted place.

But news of his departure got around among the people; they went out from the towns and followed him on foot round the shore of the lake.

So when he got out of the boat he found a large crowd of people. 14 He felt pity for them, and healed their sick.

Towards evening his disciples came to him and said, "This 15 place is a desert and it's past the time. You should send the people away; let them go to the villages and buy themselves food."

Jesus replied, "They don't have to go away. Let you give them 16 food."

"But we have nothing with us," they said, "except five loaves 17 and a couple of fish."

"Bring them here to me," he said. And he told the people to sit 18 on the grass.

He took in his hands the five loaves and the two fish. And raising 19 his eyes to heaven, as he said the grace, he broke the loaves and gave them to the disciples; and they distributed them to the people.

Everybody had a full meal.

20

Then they gathered up what was left over, twelve basketfuls.

And the number of those who had eaten was about five thousand 21 men, without counting women and children.

Jesus then made the disciples embark in the boat and go ahead 22 to the other side while he was dismissing the people.

And having sent them away, he went up into the hills to pray 23 by himself.

*Oft he seems to hide his face*

Before long the boat was many furlongs out from the shore, 24 being now buffeted by heavy waves, for a head-wind had blown up.

And as night was ending Jesus came towards them, walking on 25 the water. When the disciples saw the figure walking on the 26 water, they were terrified and cried out for fear, "It's a ghost!"

But Jesus spoke to them and said, "Courage! It is I. Have no 27 fear."

*And half-made men believe and fear*

28 Peter called out to him, "Lord, if it is you, bid me come to you over the water."

29 And Jesus said, "Come!"  
So Peter got out of the boat and walked on the water till he came to Jesus.

30 When he felt the wind, however, he got afraid; and as he began to sink he cried out, "Lord, save me!"

31 Jesus immediately reached out a hand and said, as he took hold of him, "You man of little faith, why did you doubt?"

32 And when they climbed into the boat, the wind died.

33 The men in the boat fell at his feet and said to him, "You are indeed the Son of God."

*The poor and naked come*

34 Having crossed over they landed at Gennesareth.

35 And when the people of the place saw who it was, they immediately sent word round the whole area. They brought all

36 their sick to him, asking him only to let them touch the fringe of his cloak; and as many as touched him were healed.

*Our learned carelessness*

15, 1 At this time some Pharisees and doctors of the law from  
2 Jerusalem came up to Jesus and said to him, "Why do your  
disciples not observe the traditions handed down from the  
ancient rabbis? They do not wash their hands before meals."

3 Jesus replied, "And why do you break God's commandment  
4 because of your traditions? Thus, God commanded, 'Honour  
your father and your mother; whoever curses his father or  
mother must die.'

5 But you hold that whenever a man informs his father or mother,  
'the support I owe to you has been made an offering to God,' he  
is no longer allowed to honour his father or mother.

6 So you set aside God's commandment, for the sake of your  
traditions.

7 Hypocrites! Well did Isaia prophesy concerning you:

'This people honours me with their lips, 8  
 but their hearts are far from me.  
 In vain do they worship me, 9  
 making dogmas of human enactments.' "

Then he called the people to him and said, "Listen to this and 10  
 understand it: it is not what goes into the mouth that causes 11  
 defilement, but what comes out of the mouth."

*Give us thy light, forgive us what we are*

The disciples then came to him and said, "Do you realize that the 12  
 Pharisees were shocked by your words?"

And he replied, "Any plant that has not been planted by my 13  
 heavenly Father will be rooted up. Pay no attention to them;  
 they are blind guides of the blind. When a blind man tries to 14  
 guide another who is blind, both end up in the ditch."

*Deafened and blind, with senses yet unfound*

Then Peter said to him, "Please explain the parable for us." 15  
 And Jesus replied, "Can it be that even you do not understand? 16  
 Surely you know that whatever food goes into the mouth passes 17  
 into the stomach and is then discharged. But what comes out of 18  
 the mouth has its origin in the heart, and it is this that defiles a  
 person.

From the heart come evil thoughts and sins of murder, adultery, 19  
 immorality, theft, false evidence, slander. These are what 20  
 defile a person; but to eat with unwashed hands does not cause  
 defilement."

*Deep in anonymous humility*

From there Jesus withdrew to the country of Tyre and Sidon. 21  
 And even in these remote parts there was a Canaanite woman 22  
 who came out to him and cried in a loud voice, "Have pity on  
 me, Lord, Son of David! My daughter is tormented by a demon."  
 But Jesus gave her no answer at all. 23

His disciples came up and began to advise him: "Send her away;  
 she keeps on shouting after us."

24 So Jesus said to her, “I have been sent only to the lost children of the house of Israel.”

25 But she came up, flung herself at his feet, and begged him, “Lord, help me!”

26 And he replied, “It is not right to take the children’s bread and throw it to the little puppies.”

27 “True, sir,” she answered, “but even the little puppies eat the scraps that fall from their masters’ table.”

28 At that, Jesus gave in, and said to her, “Woman, your faith is very great; what you desire shall be done.”  
And from that moment her daughter was cured.

*’Tis stricken Man in Men that pleads with Thee*

29 Jesus then left that country and came to the lake of Galilee.

30 There he climbed a hill and seated himself, while the people flocked to him and brought with them the lame, the crippled, the blind, the deaf and many other suffering people; these they laid at his feet and he healed them.

31 And the wonder of the people knew no bounds, as they saw the dumb speaking, the crippled restored, the lame walking about and the blind able to see again.  
They praised the God of Israel.

*Hunger and love in their variations*

32 He therefore summoned his disciples and said to them, “I feel sorry for these people; they have been with me now for three days and have nothing to eat. I will not send them away hungry; they might well get weak on the way.”

33 The disciples said to him, “This is a desert; how can we get enough bread here to feed such a number?”

34 “How many loaves have you?” he asked.  
And they said, “Seven, and a few small fish.”

35 Then he told the people to sit on the ground. Having taken the seven loaves and the fish he gave thanks; and as he broke them he passed them to the disciples, who gave them to the people.

37 When all had eaten their fill they gathered up what was left

38 and filled seven hampers. And the number of those who had eaten was four thousand, without counting women and children.



39 Having then dismissed the crowd, Jesus got into the boat and crossed to the district of Magadan.

*There is not room on earth for what ye seek*

16, 1 To put him to the test, the Pharisees and the Sadducees approached Jesus and asked him to call down a sign from heaven  
2 as a proof to them. And he replied, "In the evening you say,  
3 'We're going to have fine weather. Look at that red sky!' And in the morning, 'There'll be rain today; the sky is all red and fiery.' So you know how to interpret the signs of the weather—but not the signs of God's times!  
4 An evil and unfaithful generation of men asks for a sign, but no sign will be given it, except the sign of Jona."  
And he left them there and went away.

*Oh send out thy light and thy truth; let them lead me*

5 When the disciples had crossed to the other side they found that they had forgotten to bring bread.  
6 And Jesus said to them: "Keep your eyes open, and guard against the leaven of the Pharisees and the Sadducees."  
7 Thinking over this among themselves, they came to the conclusion, "It's because we brought no bread."  
8 But Jesus knew their minds and said, "Why have you these misgivings in your hearts about not having bread? Have you so  
9 little faith? Or do you still not understand? Can you not remember the five loaves among the five thousand, and the number of  
10 baskets you took up? And the seven loaves among the four thousand, and the number of hampers you took up?  
11 Why is it that you cannot see? It was not bread that I meant when I said, 'Guard against the leaven of the Pharisees and the Sadducees.'"  
12 And in the end they realized that the leaven he was warning them against was not that of bread, but that of the Pharisees' and the Sadducees' teaching.

*One burning hour throws light a thousand ways*

13 When Jesus came to the region of Caesarea Philippi he asked his disciples, "Who do people say that the Son of Man is?"

They replied, "Some say John the Baptist; others Elia; others 14 again Jeremia or one of the Prophets."

"And what about you?" he asked. "Who do you say that I am?" 15 Simon Peter replied, "You are the Messiah, the Son of the living 16 God."

*For fear she might be wilder'd in her way  
Because she wanted an unerring guide*

In answer Jesus said to him, "Simon, son of John, how blessed 17 you are! Human powers have not revealed it to you, but my Father in heaven.

To you, therefore, I say: You are Peter, the Rock, and on this 18 Rock I will build my Church, and no powers of death will ever overcome it.

I will give you the keys of the kingdom of God: whatever you 19 forbid on earth will be forbidden in heaven; whatever you allow on earth will be allowed in heaven."

He then strictly forbade the disciples to let anyone know that he 20 was the Christ.

*The eternal burden*

From then on Jesus Christ began to make it clear to his disciples 21 that his divine mission would bring him to Jerusalem; that he would have to go through great suffering at the hands of the lay rulers, the chief priests, and the doctors of the law; that he would be put to death, and on the third day would be raised again.

*Servant of God has chance of greater sin*

But Peter took him aside and began to rebuke him, "May God 22 forgive you, Lord. To think that you should suffer this—never!" And turning to Peter Jesus said, "Get behind me, you tempter! 23 You are a pitfall to me. What you desire is not the will of God but of men."

*Set all your mind upon the steep ascent*

On this occasion Jesus said to his disciples, "Any man who wants 24

to follow me must renounce himself and take up his cross and come with me.

25 The man who would save his life shall lose it; the man who loses his life for my sake shall save it.

26 For even if a person gains the whole world, **what is the advantage**, if it means losing one's true life? Or is there any price one can pay for one's life?

27 For the Son of Man will one day come with his angels in the glory of his Father, and will reward each one according to his life's work.

28 And believe me, there are some standing here who will not have died before they see the Son of Man coming in his kingdom."

*The veils of Time are riven apart*

17, 1 Six days after this Jesus took with him Peter, James, and his brother John, and brought them up a high mountain by themselves. He was transfigured before their eyes; his face shone like the sun and his clothes became like light. And suddenly they saw Moses and Elia, talking with him.

4 Peter spoke up and said to him, "Lord, how good it is that we are here! If you please, I will set up three tents, one for you, one for Moses and one for Elia."

5 As he was speaking a bright cloud overshadowed them; and from the cloud a voice said, "This is my beloved Son, whom I have chosen; listen to him."

6 And the disciples, hearing it, fell prostrate on the ground, and 7 were in great fear. But Jesus came up and touched them: "Stand up," he said. "Do not be afraid."

8 And when they looked up they saw that he was alone.

9 As they were coming down from the mountain, he warned them, "Tell no one of what you have seen until the Son of Man has been raised from the dead."

*Mark, the mark is of man's make  
And the word of it Sacrificed*

10 The disciples asked him, "Why is it, then, that according to the doctors of the law Elia must come first?"



11 And Jesus replied, "Yes, it is written that Elia is to come and  
12 restore all things; but I tell you that Elia has already come.  
They, however, did not accept him, but did to him whatever  
they wanted. So too, even the Son of Man is going to suffer at  
their hands."

13 Then the disciples realized that he had spoken to them about  
John the Baptist.

*Thou mastering me  
God, giver of breath and bread*

14 When they got back to the people a man came up and knelt at  
15 his feet. "**Have pity on my son, sir,**" he said; "he's a bad case of  
16 lunacy and often stumbles into the fire or into water. I brought  
him to your disciples, but they could do nothing for him."

17 And Jesus answered, "O people of this faithless and misguided  
generation, how long shall I be with you? How long shall I bear  
with you?  
Bring him here to me."

18 Then Jesus reprimanded him, and the evil spirit came out;  
and from that moment the boy was healed.

19 Afterwards the disciples came to him and asked, "Why couldn't  
we drive out the spirit?"

20 And he replied, "Because you have so little faith. I tell you, if  
you had faith no greater than a tiny mustard-seed, you could  
say to this mountain, 'Move away there,' and it would move.  
Nothing would be impossible to you."

*Doomed to go in company with pain*

22 After they had been going about with him for some time in  
Galilee Jesus said to his disciples, "The Son of Man will be  
surrendered to human authorities; they will put him to death;  
23 and on the third day he will be raised again." And his words  
distressed them very much.

*Love virtue, she alone is free*

24 Then they came to Capharnaum and the collectors of the temple-





tax approached Peter and said, "Does your master not pay the temple-tax?"

Peter replied, "Yes, he does."

Later, when Peter arrived home, Jesus forestalled him and asked, 25  
"What do you think, Simon? From whom do the rulers of the world get tolls and taxes—from their own citizens or from foreigners?"

"From foreigners, I should think," said Peter. 26

And Jesus said, "So the citizens are exempt. At the same time, 27  
we must not give them cause for offence. Therefore go down to the lake and cast a line. If you take the first fish that comes up and open its mouth, you will find a coin in it. Bring this, and pay the tax for both of us."

### *Childhood is health*

At this time the disciples came to Jesus and asked him, "Which 18, 1  
of us is the greatest in God's kingdom?"

And Jesus, calling over a child, set him in front of them, and 2  
said, "In God's name I tell you, if **you are not converted so as to become like little children** you shall not enter God's kingdom. The one who humbles himself, like this little child here, is the 4 greatest in God's kingdom; and whoever receives one such child 5 in my name, receives me.

### *Elegy of innocence and youth*

Better that a man should have a mill-stone tied about his neck 6 and be drowned in the depths of the sea than that he cause the fall of one of these little ones who have faith in me.

Woe upon the world because of scandal and corruption! Scandals 7 there must be, but woe to any man who causes scandal.

If your hand or your foot is a danger to you, cut it off and throw 8 it away; better for you to enter life disabled or lame than to keep both hands or feet and to be thrown into eternal fire.

If your eye is a danger to you, pluck it out and throw it away; 9 better for you to enter life with one eye than to keep both eyes and to be thrown to everlasting perdition.

*Whoever degrades another degrades me*

- 10 See that you never despise one of these little ones; for I tell you, their angels in heaven have unceasing vision of my heavenly Father.
- 11 Suppose a man has a hundred sheep and one of them goes astray, what do you think he will do? Will he not leave the ninety-nine on the mountain-side and go after the one that strayed?
- 12 And if he is lucky enough to find it, believe me, he rejoices more over it than over the ninety-nine that did not stray.
- 13 The same too is the mind of your Father in heaven; he does not want a single one of these little ones to be lost.

*There is no life that is not in community*

- 14 If your fellow-Christian does wrong, go first and speak straight words to him in private. If he listens to you, you will have won back your fellow-Christian. But if he will not listen, bring one or two others as well, so that every word may be vouched for by two or three witnesses; if he pays no heed to these, bring the matter to the Church; and if he will not heed the Church treat him as a non-Christian or a public sinner.
- 15 Believe me, anything you forbid on earth will be forbidden in heaven; and anything you allow on earth, will be allowed in heaven.

*And no community not lived in praise of GOD*

- 16 Again, I assure you of this, that whenever two of you on earth pray together with one voice for something they need, they will receive it from my heavenly Father. For wherever two or three are gathered in my name, I am there with them."

*Of supernatural sympathy  
Universal love and hope*

- 17 Peter then came up and asked him, "Lord, how often shall a brother wrong me that I should still forgive him? Up to seven times?"

Jesus replied, "Not so, I tell you. Not only seven times but 22 seventy times seven—always.

God's kingdom therefore is like this: There was once a king who 23 decided to settle accounts with his servants; the bills were sent 24 out, and a debtor was brought in who owed him a hundred 25 millions. His employer, finding him unable to pay, ordered him 26 to be sold into slavery, with his wife, children and all his property, so as to meet the debt. But the servant flung himself at his 27 feet and implored him, 'Be patient with me, and I will pay you all.' And the employer had pity on that servant; he let him off, 28 and even cancelled his debt.

The same man, however, went off and discovered a workmate 29 who owed him a trifling sum of money. He caught him by the throat and demanded, 'Pay what you owe me!' And the work- 30 mate flung himself at his feet and implored him, 'Be patient with me and I will pay you.' But he refused and had him thrown 31 in jail, until he paid his debt.

Now when this man's colleagues saw what had happened they 31 were very incensed about it; so they went to their employer and told him the whole story. And the employer summoned the 32 man and said to him, 'You scoundrel! I cancelled all your debt, because you implored me. Surely you should have let off your 33 workmate, as I let you off?'

The employer therefore was very angry and gave the man over 34 to the torturers, till he would pay back all his debt.

And that is how my heavenly Father will deal with you, if you 35 do not all forgive your fellow-Christians from your heart."

*Two souls with a single thought  
Two hearts that beat as one*

After concluding his sermon Jesus left Galilee for the borders of 19, 1 Judaea on the other side of the Jordan. Large crowds of people 2 followed him and he healed their sicknesses.

Some Pharisees came up to test him with a question: "Is it 3 lawful for a man to divorce his wife on any and every ground?"

And Jesus replied to them, "You have read in Scripture, have 4

you not, that the Creator from the very beginning made them 5 male and female, and thereby added, 'for this reason a man shall leave his father and mother, and be so united to his wife that the two are but one'?

6 No longer therefore are they two persons, but a single being; and the bond that God has created may not be loosed by man."

7 "In that case," they replied, "why did Moses lay it down that if a man divorces his wife he should certify her dismissal in writing?"

8 Jesus replied, "If Moses allowed you to divorce your wives it was only because of your gross disobedience; the option was not there from the beginning.

This is what I say: Any man who divorces his wife—except for unchastity—and marries another, commits adultery."

*Grace is given of God*

10 His disciples said to him, "If that is how things are between a man and his wife, there is no sense in marrying."

11 And Jesus answered, "Not all accept this precept—only those 12 to whom the grace has been given. There are people who cannot marry, because they are born that way; there are people who cannot marry, because marriage has been made impossible for them by men; and there are people who cannot marry because **such is the choice they have made for the kingdom of God**. Whoever can accept it, let him do so."

*A friend for little children*

13 On that occasion people brought him children to have him lay his hands on them in prayer, but the disciples scolded them for it.

14 And Jesus said, "Let the children alone, and do not stop them from coming to me; for the kingdom of God belongs to their kind."

15 Then he laid his hands on them.

And afterwards he went away from there.

*How do I love thee? Let me count the ways*

16 A man came up and said to him, "Master, what good must I do to enter eternal life?"





And Jesus said, "Why ask me 'what good'? There is only One 17  
who is Goodness itself. If you desire to enter eternal life, keep the  
commandments."

"Which ones?" asked the man. 18

And Jesus replied, "Do not murder, do not commit adultery,  
**do not steal**, do not give false witness, honour your father and 19  
mother, love your fellow-man as yourself."

The young man answered, "All these I have kept. What else 20  
must I do?"

And Jesus said to him, "If you want to be perfect, go and sell 21  
everything you own. Give the money to the poor, and you will  
have riches in heaven; then come and follow me."

And on hearing these words the young man went away in 22  
sorrow, for he was very wealthy.

*And offers, for short life, eternal liberty*

Jesus said to his disciples, "Believe me, it is extremely difficult 23  
for a wealthy person to enter the kingdom of God. Again I say, 24  
it is easier for a camel to pass through the eye of a needle than for  
a wealthy person to enter the kingdom of God."

The disciples were utterly astonished at his reply. "Who then 25  
can be saved?" they asked.

But Jesus looked at them and said, "For mere men such is 26  
impossible; but for God all things are possible."

*The Lord is my chosen portion and my cup* .

Peter then spoke up and said to him, "See now, we have given up 27  
all things in order to follow you; what return shall we get?"

And Jesus replied, "In God's name I tell you, in the coming age 28  
of renewal, when the Son of Man sits on his throne as supreme  
Judge, you who have followed me will sit on thrones as judges  
of the twelve tribes of Israel.

Everyone who for my sake has given up home, or brothers, or 29  
sisters, or father, or mother, or children, or lands, will be  
richly rewarded, and will inherit eternal life.

Many of the first will be last and the last first.

30

*For us there is only the trying. The rest is not our business*

- 20, 1 For this is how it is with God's kingdom: There was once a farmer who went out early one morning to hire workers for his vineyard.
- 2 And having agreed with the workers on the wage for the day he sent them into his vineyard.
- 3 Then, at about nine o'clock, he went out and saw others standing around idle in the square. He said to them, 'Go into the vineyard, you too. I will give you a fair wage.'
- 5 So they went in.
- At about twelve o'clock he went out and did the same again, and also at three o'clock.
- 6 And on going out about five o'clock he still found some standing around. 'Why are you standing here idle all the day?' he said to them.
- 7 And they replied, 'Because nobody hired us.'
- So he said to them, 'Go in there, you too, to the vineyard.'
- 8 At the end of the day the farmer said to his foreman, 'Call in the workers and give them their pay, starting with the last and finishing with the first.'
- 9 So those who had been hired at five o'clock came along, and each of them received a full day's wage.
- 10 And when it came to the turn of those who had been hired in the morning, they thought they would receive more. But no! They too got what the others had got.
- 11 So they felt a grievance against the farmer, and began to complain, 'These last have only worked an hour, and yet you put them on the same footing as us. And we have sweated the whole day long, even during the hottest sun.'
- 13 But he replied, 'Friend, I'm doing you no wrong. Did you not agree with me for what you got? So take your pay and go! If I give the last the same that I gave you, it's because I want it that way. Am I not entitled to do what I like with my own money? Or is it because I am good that your mind is evil?'
- 16 So the last will be first and the first last."

*A path of suffering decreed*

- 17 In view of the fact that he was going up to Jerusalem, Jesus took

the Twelve aside and told them privately, as they were travelling, “We are now going up to Jerusalem, where the Son of Man will 18 be surrendered to the chief priests and doctors of the law; they will sentence him to death and hand him over to the pagans to 19 be mocked, cruelly beaten, and crucified; and on the third day he will be raised to life.”

*Ranks, conditions, and degrees*

At this time the mother of Zebedee’s sons came up to him, and 20 brought her sons with her. She knelt at his feet to ask a favour. “What do you desire?” Jesus asked.

And she replied, “Say that these two sons of mine shall sit with you in your kingdom, the one on your right, the other on your left.”

Jesus answered, “You do not know what you are asking. Can 22 you drink the cup that I am to drink?”

“We can,” they replied.

And he said, “My cup of suffering you shall indeed drink. But 23 the favour of sitting at my right or my left is not mine to give; it is for those alone for whom it has been reserved by my Father.”

When the other ten disciples heard about this, they were very 24 angry with the two brothers.

*Small to myself, to others milde*

So Jesus called them to him and said, “You know that the rulers 25 of the foreign peoples govern them with an iron hand, and their overlords treat them harshly. But with you it is different. Who- 26 ever wants to be great among you must be the servant of all; whoever wants to be the first among you must be the slave of 27 all.

For the Son of Man too has not come to be served, but to serve 28 and to give his life in sacrifice for all.”

*I have been blind, and now my eyes can see*

As they left Jericho a large crowd was following with him. 29 Two blind men were sitting by the roadside; and when they 30

learned that Jesus was passing by, they shouted out, "Lord, Son of David, have pity on us!"

- 31 The people warned them to hold their tongues.  
But they shouted all the more, "Lord, Son of David, have pity on us!"
- 32 So Jesus stopped and called out to them, "What do you want me to do for you?"
- 33 And they replied, "Please, Lord, that we may get our sight back."
- 34 Moved to pity, Jesus touched their eyes and immediately they could see again.  
And they followed with him.

*Peace above all earthly dignities*

- 21, 1 By now they were approaching Jerusalem. When they reached Bethphage on the Mount of Olives, Jesus sent ahead two of his
- 2 disciples and said to them, "Go into the village there in front of you and as you enter it you will find a donkey tethered, along
- 3 with her foal. Untie them and bring them to me. If anyone questions you about it, tell him the Lord needs them and he will let them go at once."
- 4 This took place to bring about what the prophet had foretold:  
5 'Tell the daughter of Sion:  
See, your King is coming to you,  
humbly riding on a donkey,  
and on the foal of a beast of burden.'
- 6 The disciples went off and followed his instructions; they brought the donkey and her foal and flung their coats on them; and Jesus mounted.

*O barefoot King held nothing worth*

- 8 There was a large crowd. Many of them spread their coats on the road; others cut branches from the trees and laid them along it.
- 9 And all the people—those who led in front of Jesus and those who followed behind—shouted out:  
"Greeting to the Son of David!"

A blessing on him who comes in the name of the Lord!  
 Greeting from heaven above!"  
 As he rode into Jerusalem the whole city was in a ferment. 10  
 Everyone was asking, "Who is this?"  
 And the people replied, "This is the prophet, Jesus, from 11  
 Nazareth in Galilee."

*An unweeded garden that grows to seed*

On entering the temple-area Jesus drove out the traders who 12  
 were buying and selling in the holy place; he overturned the  
 tables of the money-changers and the seats of the pigeon-sellers.  
 And he said to them:  
 "It is written in Scripture, 'My house shall be called a house of 13  
 prayer.' But you make it a hide-out for thieves."

*And I cried, once, to God, as a child cries*

Blind and lame people also came to him in the temple and he 14  
 healed them. When the chief priests and doctors of the law saw 15  
 the extraordinary things he did and heard the children crying  
 out in the temple, "Greeting to the Son of David!" they became  
 indignant. "You hear what they are saying?" they said to him.  
 And Jesus replied, "Yes. Have you not read the words of 16  
 Scripture: 'Children and infants at the breast you have taught  
 to sing your praises'?"  
 Then he left them and went out from the city to Bethany, 17  
 where he spent the night.

*Now I know what was wanting in my youth*

On his way back to the city early next morning he felt hungry. 18  
 So when he saw a fig-tree by the road-side he went over to it, 19  
 but he found nothing on it except leaves. He said to it, "Let there  
 never be fruit from you again."

And the fig-tree withered on the spot.  
 The disciples were astonished and said to him, "How is it that 20  
 the fig-tree withered on the spot?"  
 And Jesus replied, "Believe me, if you have faith—unwavering 21

faith—not only will you do as I have done to the fig-tree; even if you say to this mountain, 'be lifted and thrown into the sea', it shall be done.

22 Whatever you ask for in prayer, you shall receive—if you have faith."

*Our dishonest mood of denial*

23 When he entered the temple some of the chief priests and elders of the people approached him as he was teaching and asked, "What authority have you to do these things? Who gave you this authority?"

24 Jesus replied, "I too have a question for you, and if you answer me I will let you know by what authority I act as I do: Was the baptism of John from God or from men?"

25 So they began to talk it over among themselves, "Shall we say it was from God? But he will ask, 'Why did you not put faith

26 in him?' Or shall we say it was from men? But then we must fear the people; for the people all hold John to have been a prophet."

27 They replied therefore, "We do not know."

And he said, "Neither will I let you know by what authority I do these things."

*The readiness is all*

"But what do you think of this?" he asked.

28 "A man had two sons. He went first to the elder and said, 'Son, go out and work today in my vineyard.'

29 And the son replied, 'Certainly, sir!'—but he did not go. Then he turned to the other and asked the same of him.

30 And he said, 'I won't go!'

But he was sorry afterwards, and went.

31 Now which of the two sons obeyed his father's will?" "The second," they replied.

And Jesus said, "Believe me, public sinners and fallen women

32 will get to the kingdom of God before you. When John came to you preaching the will of God, it was not you who put faith in him, but the public sinners and the fallen women. And yet, even with their example, you did not later change heart and put faith in him.

*Love and Pity both are dead*

Listen to another parable: A landlord once planted a vineyard. 33  
 He fenced it with a wall, and dug a wine-press in it, and built a  
 watch-tower, and then leased his vineyard to tenants and went  
 abroad.

When harvest-time came round he sent his servants to the tenants 34  
 to collect his share of the harvest.

But the tenants laid hold of the servants; one they whipped, 35  
 another they murdered, another they stoned.

Next time the landlord sent an even greater number of servants; 36  
 but the tenants treated them all in the same way.

So at the end he sent them his own son; he said to himself, 37  
 'They will respect my son.'

But the tenants, when they saw the son coming, decided on their 38  
 plan: 'This is the heir! Here's our chance to kill him, and the  
 property will be ours.'

So they seized him, threw him out of the vineyard and killed him. 39  
 Now what do you think? When the owner of the vineyard 40  
 comes, how will he deal with those tenants?"

*Except the Lord build the house*

They said to him, "He will destroy those scoundrels and give his 41  
 vineyard to other tenants, who will pay him his rent when it is  
 due."

And Jesus said to them, "Have you not read in Scripture: 42  
 'The stone rejected by the builders,  
 has itself become the foundation-stone.'

This is the Lord's doing;  
 our eyes can hardly believe it.?"

Therefore, I tell you, God's kingdom will be taken from you and 43  
 given to a people who produce the fruits demanded by it.

Anyone who falls on this stone will be broken; and anyone on 44  
 whom it falls will be crushed."

*The timeless end, you never knew,  
 The peace that lay, the light that shone*

And the chief priests and Pharisees, hearing his parables, knew 45  
 that he was referring to themselves.

46 But, while they would have liked to arrest him, they were afraid of the people; for the people looked on him as a prophet.

*Thou preparest a table before me*

22, 1 Speaking once again in a parable, Jesus said to them:  
2 "The kingdom of God is like a king who gave a banquet for his  
3 son's wedding and sent out his servants to summon all who had  
been invited to the feast.  
But they refused to come.  
4 So he sent out more servants, and told them to tell the invited  
guests, 'Look, I have everything prepared for this dinner;  
my steers and fatted animals have all been slaughtered and  
everything is ready. So come to the wedding.'

*And a time comes when a man is afraid to grow*

5 But they were not interested. They went their various ways:  
6 one to his farm, another to his business, while others seized  
his servants, outraged them, and even killed them.  
7 And the king was furious; he sent his troops, destroyed those  
murderers, and burnt their city.

*To have known him, to have loved him*

*After loneliness long*

8 Then he said to his servants, 'Here we are with a dinner ready,  
9 and the invited guests have all been discredited. Therefore go  
out to the road-crossings and invite to my banquet any people  
you may find.'  
10 So the servants went out on the roads and brought in all they  
could find, bad as well as good.  
And the dining-hall was filled with guests.

*The undone years*

11 Afterwards the king went into his dining-hall to have a look at  
the guests and saw there a man who was not properly dressed  
for a wedding.

'Friend,' he said to him, 'how dare you come in here without 12  
being dressed for a wedding?'

But the man had nothing to say.

So the king gave orders to the attendants, 'Bind him hand and 13  
foot, and throw him out in the dark; there, I tell you, will be the  
wailing and anguish of remorse!'

For that is how it is: many are called; few are chosen.'

14

*All is Caesar's; and what odds  
So long as Caesar's self is God's*

The Pharisees then went off and decided on a plan by which 15  
they hoped to snare him.

They sent a delegation of their disciples and some followers of 16  
Herod who said to him, "Master, we know that you are an  
honest man and teach God's way as it really is; you do not bow  
to public opinion, since you are not the kind who plays up to  
important folk.

What do you think? Is it right to pay tax to the Roman emperor 17  
or not?"

But Jesus knew what was behind it. "How clever!" he said. 18  
"So you would trap me? May I see the coin of the tax?" 19

And they brought him a coin.

"Whose is this image?" he asked, "and whose is the name 20  
inscribed?"

They replied, "Caesar's."

21

"Give then to Caesar what is Caesar's," he said, "and to God  
what is God's."

And they were so dumbfounded by his answer that they left 22  
him and went away.

*All losses are restored and sorrows end*

That same day a party of Sadducees—the people who hold there 23  
is no resurrection—came to him with this question: "Master, 24  
Moses laid it down that if a man dies without children his brother  
should marry the widow and raise up a family to the dead man.  
Now we once had seven brothers among us. The first of them 25  
married and died, and having no children left the wife for his

MATTHEW 22

26 brother; and the same happened in the case of the second and  
27 third and the rest of the seven. Last of all the wife died.  
28 Now in your opinion which of the seven will have her as wife  
in the life after resurrection, since they had all married her?"  
29 Jesus replied, "You are in error, knowing neither the Scriptures  
30 nor the power of God. In the life after resurrection men and  
women do not marry; they are like angels in heaven.  
31 As for the resurrection from the dead, have you not read the word  
32 that God spoke to you: 'I am the God of Abraham, the God of  
Isaac, and the God of Jacob'? Therefore, he is not a God of the  
dead but of the living."  
33 And the people who heard all this were astounded at his teaching.

*The sum of all law*

34 On learning that he had silenced the Sadducees the Pharisees  
gathered round again.  
35 And one of them, a doctor of the law, put him a leading ques-  
36 tion: "Master," he asked, "which is the greatest commandment  
of the law?"  
37 Jesus replied: "You shall love the Lord your God with all your  
heart, and all your soul, and all your mind.  
38 This is the greatest and most important commandment of all.  
39 And the second is similar: **You shall love your fellow-man as  
yourself.**  
40 On these two commandments, as on two hinges, hangs the whole  
of the law and the Prophets."

*I will be his Father, and he shall be my son*

41 Then, as the Pharisees were still assembled, Jesus put this ques-  
42 tion to them: "What is your view concerning the Messiah?  
Whose son is he to be?"  
They replied, "David's."  
43 "How is it, then," he asked, "that the inspired David calls him  
Lord? For David says,  
44 'The Lord said to my Lord:  
Sit at my right hand,  
Until I lay your enemies under your feet.'



45 How can the Messiah be David's son if David calls him 'Lord'?"  
46 And not one of them could answer him.  
From that day on none of them dared to ask him any more questions.

*Their purpose is ambition,  
their practice only hate*

23, 1 Speaking then to the people and to his disciples Jesus said, "The doctors of the law and the Pharisees occupy the chair of 3 Moses; therefore you must carry out everything they teach you. But you are not to follow the example of their deeds; for the 4 Pharisees do not practise what they preach. They pile up heavy burdens and place them on men's shoulders, but will not lift a finger to move these burdens themselves.  
5 All their actions are for the admiration of the public: they enlarge their prayer-locks and wear their fringes extra wide; 6 they like to have the top places at the banquets and first seats in 7 the synagogues; they like to be greeted respectfully in the streets and to be hailed with the title 'Master'.

*Stamped with the image of the King*

8 But you must not be called 'Master'; for One alone is your Master, and you are all brothers.  
9 And you must not call any one of yours on earth 'Father'; for One alone is your Father—the One in heaven.  
10 And you must not be called 'Guide'; for your Guide is Christ.  
11 The greatest among you shall be your servant.  
12 Whoever exalts himself shall be humbled; whoever humbles himself shall be exalted.

*Self-school'd, self-scann'd*

13 Woe to you, doctors of the law and Pharisees, hypocrites! You shut men out from the kingdom of God; you do not enter yourselves and those who are on the way to entering you prevent.  
15 Woe to you, doctors of the law and Pharisees, hypocrites! You go round land and sea in your quest for a single convert; and when he has taken the step you put him on the road to perdition even more surely than yourselves.

Woe to you, blind guides! You hold that to swear by the temple <sup>16</sup> does not count, but to swear by the gold in the temple carries obligation.

Blind fools! Which is the more important: the gold or the temple <sup>17</sup> that consecrates the gold?

You hold that to swear by the altar does not count, but to swear <sup>18</sup> by the offering on the altar carries obligation.

What blindness! For which is the more important, the offering, <sup>19</sup> or the altar that consecrates the offering?

Therefore, to swear by the altar is to invoke not only the altar <sup>20</sup> but the offering laid upon it.

To swear by the temple is to invoke not only the temple but the <sup>21</sup> One who dwells in it.

To swear by heaven is to invoke not only God's throne but God <sup>22</sup> himself.

Woe to you, doctors of the law and Pharisees, hypocrites! You <sup>23</sup> pay tithes of garden herbs and vegetables, but neglect the weighty obligations of the law: right and mercy and faith. These it was your duty to observe, whatever about the rest.

Blind guides! You strain out the flies, but swallow the camel. <sup>24</sup> Woe to you, doctors of the law and Pharisees, hypocrites! You <sup>25</sup> polish clean the outside of cup and dish, while the inside reeks of robbery and insatiable greed.

O blind Pharisee! Cleanse first the inside of the cup, and then <sup>26</sup> the outside will be clean as well.

Woe to you, doctors of the law and Pharisees, hypocrites! You <sup>27</sup> resemble white-washed tombs: outside they look spick-and-span; inside they are full of dead bones and rotteness.

The same with you: outside you appear to be holy men; inside <sup>28</sup> you are full of deceit and rebelliousness.

Woe to you, doctors of the law and Pharisees, hypocrites! You <sup>29</sup> build the monuments to the prophets and adorn the tombs of the saints. You say, 'If we were living at the time of our ancestors <sup>30</sup> we wouldn't have taken part in the killing of the prophets.'

And you give yourselves away as the sons of those who murdered <sup>31</sup> the prophets.

MATTHEW 23/24

32 Go on then to complete the work of your ancestors! You serpents! You brood of vipers! How can you escape the judgement of damnation?

*Have I not reason to lament  
What man has made of man?*

34 Yes, I even send you prophets, wise men, and teachers, and to what effect? Some of them you will murder and crucify; others you will have flogged in your synagogues and hunted from town to town. So that all the innocent blood shed on earth from the days of the righteous Abel to the days of Zacharia, the son of Barachia, whom you murdered between the temple and the altar of sacrifice—all of it will come upon you.

36 In God's name I tell you, all of it will come upon the men of this generation.

*The pangs of despised love*

37 Jerusalem, O city of Jerusalem, who kill the prophets and stone the men whom God sends to you, how often have I longed to gather your children, as a hen gathers her chickens under her wings; but you refused.

38 And therefore, 'your house will be abandoned.' For I tell you, after this you will not see me again, until you exclaim, 'Blessed he who comes in the name of the Lord!' "

*When the earth totters and all its inhabitants*

24, 1 Jesus then left the temple. And as he was going along his disciples gathered round to draw his attention to the temple buildings.

2 He said in reply: "You see all these? Believe me, not a stone will be left upon a stone. All will be torn asunder."

*And the nations do but murmur, snarling at each other's heels*

3 He was sitting at the summit of the Mount of Olives when his disciples came to him alone and asked him, "Tell us when is all

this to happen? And what will be the sign of your coming and of the end of the world?"

Jesus replied, "Take care that you are not led astray; for many 4 will come claiming my name and saying, 'I am the Messiah', and will lead many astray. A time will come when you will hear 6 noises of war, and rumours of war; but do not panic. All this must inevitably happen; it does not mean that the end has come. Nation will rise against nation, kingdom against kingdom; there 7 will be famines and earthquakes in many places. But so far the 8 birth-pangs of the new era are only beginning.

*Hurrying with the modern crowd, as eager and fickle as any*

Then they will abandon you to the worst, and put you to death; 9 and you will be hated by all peoples, because of my name. Then 10 too large numbers will fall away from God, and will betray one another, and hate one another. False prophets will appear in 11 plenty and will lead many astray.

And with the spread of rebellion against God, the love of many 12 will grow cold; but the man who holds out to the end will be 13 saved. This gospel of the kingdom will by then have been 14 preached throughout the whole world, so that all the peoples will bear responsibility. And then the end will come.

*Freedom, free to slay herself, and dying while they shout her name*

When therefore you see what the prophet Daniel predicted as 15 the 'desecrating horror' standing in the holy place (if the reader but mark it well!), the day will have come for the people of 16 Judaea to escape to the mountains. Any man who is on the roof 17 of his house, let him not come down looking for anything inside; any man who is working outside on his farm, let him not turn 18 back to pick up his coat.

And alas for women with child, or with infants at the breast, 19 when those days come!

You must therefore pray that your flight will not be in winter- 20 time or on the sabbath. For this will be a time of great affliction, 21 the like of which has never been before, since the world began, and never will be again. Indeed, if those days had not been cut 22

## MATTHEW 24

short, no man would be saved; but for the sake of God's chosen ones, those days will be cut short.

- 23 If people come running to tell you then, 'the Messiah is here!'
- 24 or 'the Messiah is there!' do not believe them. For false Messiahs will appear and false prophets; and they will work signs and portents, so as to deceive—if that were possible—even God's chosen ones.
- 25 Remember! I have forewarned you. So if they say to you, 'he is out there in the desert', do not go; or if they say to you, 'he is hidden inside', do not believe it.
- 27 For as the lightning-flash shines from the east to the west, so it will be at the coming of the Son of Man.
- 28 Wherever the corpse lies, there gather the vultures.

*Chaos, Cosmos! Cosmos, Chaos! who can tell how all will end?*

- 29 Immediately after the affliction of those days the sun will be darkened, the moon will lose its light, the stars will fall from heaven, and the heavenly bodies will be shaken.
- 30 Then the sign of the Son of Man will appear in the sky; and all the tribes of the earth will wail in remorse, when they see the Son of Man coming in the clouds of heaven, in power and great splendour.
- 31 At the sound of a mighty trumpet he will send out his angels, and they will assemble his chosen ones from the four corners of the world, from one end of heaven to the other.

*Swayed by vaster ebbs and flows than can be known to you or me*

- 32 Learn a lesson from the fig-tree: When its branches grow tender and its leaves begin to sprout, you know that the summer is near.
- 33 So too, when you see all these things happen, let it be known to you that the judge is already at the gates.
- 34 Believe me, the present generation will not have passed away
- 35 before all these things come to pass. Heaven and earth shall pass
- 36 away; my words shall not pass away. Nevertheless, no one knows of that day or the hour—not even the angels in heaven, not even the Son, but only the Father.

For the coming of the Son of Man will be like the time of Noah. 37  
 In the days before the deluge people were eating and drinking, 38  
 marrying and being married, until the moment that Noah  
 entered the ark; and no one gave heed, until the deluge came 39  
 and swept them all away.

That too is how it will be at the coming of the Son of Man. 40  
 Two men will then be working in a field; one will be taken and 41  
 the other left. Two women will be grinding flour at a mill; one 42  
 will be taken and the other left.

Therefore stay awake; for the day of your Lord's coming you 43  
 do not know.

But you know this much, that if the master of the house knew 43  
 the hour of the night when the thief was coming, he would stay  
 awake and would not allow his house to be robbed.

Therefore you too must stand ready, because the Son of Man 44  
 will come at a time when you least expect him.

*This is the next moment. This is the beginning*

Who do you think is a reliable and careful servant? Whom does 45  
 the master put in charge of his household to distribute food at  
 the right time? Happy that servant if his master finds him doing 46  
 his duty when he comes!

Believe me, he will put him in charge of all his property. 47  
 But if that servant thinks to himself, 'My master won't be back 48  
 for a while yet!' If he starts striking his fellow-servants, or having 49  
 a good time with drunkards, then his master will come on a day, 50  
 and at an hour, when he is not expected. He will have him flogged 51  
 and will throw him out with the hypocrites; and there, I tell  
 you, will be the wailing and anguish of remorse!

*We do not pass twice through the same door*

On that day God's kingdom will be like the ten bridesmaids who 25, 1  
 went out with their lamps to meet the bridegroom; five of them 2  
 were foolish and five prudent. Whereas the five foolish, in bring- 3  
 ing their lamps, did not take oil with them, the five prudent 4  
 brought containers of oil along with their lamps.

Then the bridegroom was delayed and the bridesmaids all got 5  
 tired and fell asleep.

MATTHEW 25

6 But in the middle of the night there was a cry, 'Here comes the bridegroom! Go out and meet him.'

7 So all the bridesmaids got up and prepared their lamps; and the foolish ones said to the others: 'Give us some of your oil; our lamps are going out.'

9 But they replied 'We cannot; there won't be enough for all of us. Better go to the shops and buy some for yourselves.'

10 So they went off to buy oil. And while they were gone the bridegroom arrived. Those who were ready went in with him to the wedding feast, and the door was closed.

11 When the others arrived it was too late, and they called out, 'Please, Lord, please open to us.'

12 But he replied, 'Why, I don't even know you!'

13 Stay awake, therefore, because you have no idea of the day or the hour.

*So in this perilous grace of God  
With all my sins go I*

14 Or again: A man who was going abroad summoned his servants in order to give over his money to them. Dividing it according

15 to the ability of each, he gave fifty thousand to one, twenty thousand to another, and five thousand to another. Then he left the country.

16 And the man who got fifty thousand immediately started working on it and made another fifty thousand in profit.

17 So too, the man with twenty thousand made another twenty.

18 But the one who got five thousand went out and dug a hole in the ground and hid away his master's money.

19 Then after a long time the master of those servants came back and wanted to know how they had got on.

20 The one who had got the fifty thousand brought along fifty thousand more. 'Sir,' he said, 'you gave me fifty thousand; here now are fifty thousand more which I have made in profit.'

21 And his master said to him, 'Well done! Here's a man who does a good and honest job. You have proved yourself in these little things, so I will place you over many. Go in there and share in your Lord's feast.'

Then came the man with the twenty thousand. 'Sir,' he said, 22  
 'you gave me twenty thousand; here now are twenty thousand  
 more which I have made in profit.'

And his master said to him, 'Well done! Here's another who 23  
 does a good and honest job. You have proved yourself in these  
 little things, so I will place you over many. Go in there and share  
 in your Lord's feast.'

Then came the man who had received the five thousand. 'Sir,' 24  
 he said, 'I knew you to be a hard man. You reap without having  
 planted, and you gather without having scattered. So I was 25  
 afraid, and I went and hid your five thousand in a hole in the  
 ground. Here now—you have what is yours.'

His master replied, 'You are a useless, lazy fellow. You knew 26  
 that I reap without having planted, and gather without having  
 scattered. Why, then, your duty was to invest my money in the 27  
 banks; and on my return I should have got it back with interest.  
 Take that five thousand away from him and give it to the man 28  
 with the fifty thousand!'

For the more one has, the more one will be given—and plenty 29  
 of it; whoever has next-to-nothing will lose even the little he has.  
 As for that useless servant, throw him out in the dark; and there, 30  
 I tell you, will be the wailing and anguish of remorse!

*Naught shelters thee, who wilt not shelter Me*

When the Son of Man comes in his glory, and all the angels with 31  
 him, he will sit on his throne as Judge. All the peoples will be 32  
 assembled before him and he will sort them out, as a shepherd  
 divides the sheep from the goats; the sheep he will put on his 33  
 right and the goats on his left.

Then the king will say to those on his right, 'Come you chosen 34  
 of my Father and possess the kingdom prepared for you since the  
 creation of the world. For I was hungry and you gave me to eat; 35  
 I was thirsty and you gave me to drink; I was a stranger and you  
 welcomed me, naked and you clothed me, sick and you looked 36  
 after me; I was in prison and you visited me.'

And these good and holy people will ask in reply, 'Lord, when 37  
 did we see you hungry that we gave you to eat, or thirsty that we  
 gave you to drink? When did we see you a stranger that we wel- 38

39 comed you, or naked that we clothed you? When did we see you sick or in prison, that we visited you?"  
40 And the king will reply, 'Believe me, since you did it for one of these brothers of mine—even the least—you did it for me.'

41 Then he will turn to those on his left and say, 'Go away from me, you reprobate people, to the everlasting fire prepared for the devil and his angels. For you did not give me to eat when I was hungry; you did not give me to drink when I was thirsty; you did not welcome me when I was a stranger; you did not clothe me when I was naked; you did not visit me when I was sick or in prison.'

44 They will ask him, 'Lord, when did we see you hungry, or thirsty, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, that we did not come to your help?'

45 And he will say, 'Believe me, since you refused it to one of these—even the least—you refused it to me.'

46 So these will go to everlasting punishment, and the righteous to everlasting life."

*A certain convocation*

26, 1 When Jesus had finished this sermon he said to his disciples,  
2 "You know that the paschal feast begins in two days time and the Son of Man will be given over to enemies and crucified."  
3 The chief priests and the elders of the people held a meeting in  
4 the palace of the high priest, whose name was Caiphas. They  
5 discussed a scheme to have Jesus arrested and killed, but decided: "Not during the festival, lest the people start a riot."

*A woman like that is misunderstood.  
I have been her kind*

6 Now while Jesus was dining at Bethany in the house of Simon,  
7 a former leper, a woman came up with an alabaster flask of very expensive perfume and poured it on his head.  
8 On seeing this the disciples were indignant. "Why this waste?"  
9 they said. "This perfume could have been sold at a high price and the money given to the poor."



## MATTHEW 26

10 But Jesus noticed it and said to them, "Do you have to be unkind to her? This is a fine thing she has done for me. The poor you have with you always, but not me. Her pouring this perfume on my body was intended for my burial.

13 I tell you, therefore, wherever the gospel is preached in the whole world, what she has done will also be told in remembrance of her."

### *Flawed priest*

14 At this point one of the Twelve called Judas Iscariot went to the chief priests and asked them, "How much will you give me, and I will betray him to you?"  
They settled with him for thirty pieces of silver.

16 And from then on Judas was on the look-out for a suitable occasion to betray him.

### *Through the days that He wrought, till the day that He stayed*

17 On the first day of the feast of the unleavened bread the disciples came to Jesus and asked, "Where do you wish us to prepare for you to eat the paschal lamb?"

18 And he replied, "Go to our friend in the city and say to him, 'The Master sends this message: My time is drawing near; I am going to celebrate the pasch with my disciples in your house.' "

19 The disciples followed his instructions and prepared the paschal meal.

### *Am I the man?*

20 Late in the evening he sat at table with the Twelve. And during the meal he said to them, "In God's name I tell you, one of you is going to betray me."

22 They were very distressed and began to say, every one of them, "Surely not I, Lord?"

23 He replied, "My betrayer is one who puts his hand with mine in the common dish. The Son of Man must go his way, so that everything about him in Scripture may come to pass. But woe to the man by whom he is betrayed! It would have been better for that man not to have been born."

Then Judas, the traitor, asked, "Am I the one, Master?" 25  
And Jesus replied, "You say it."

*Still do I love, still shed my blood for thee*

During the meal, after he had taken bread in his hands and 26  
spoken the blessing, Jesus broke it and gave it to his disciples:  
"Take and eat it," he said, "this is my body."  
He took the cup, gave thanks, and passed it to them with these 27  
words: "Let all of you drink from it; for this is my blood of the 28  
covenant, to be shed for all men for the forgiveness of sins.  
I tell you, never again shall I drink this wine of the grape, until 29  
that day when I drink it with you new in the kingdom of my  
Father."

*Back to where he started from, alone*

Afterwards they sang the hymn and went out to the Mount of 30  
Olives.  
And Jesus said to them, "Tonight all of you will fall away 31  
because of me. For Scripture says, 'I will strike the shepherd and  
the sheep of the flock will be scattered.'  
But after my resurrection I will go on before you to Galilee." 32  
Peter replied, "The others may fall away because of you—but 33  
not I. I shall never fall."  
And Jesus said to him, "Believe me, before the cock crows 34  
to-night, you will deny me three times."  
Peter replied to him, "Even if I have to die with you, I will not 35  
deny you." And the other disciples were equally confident.

*The chalice of the grapes of God*

Then Jesus came with them to a place called Gethsemane and 36  
said to his disciples, "Sit here, while I go over there and pray."  
He took Peter and the two sons of Zebedee along with him; and 37  
he began to suffer an agony of grief and anguish. "My heart is 38  
breaking with grief," he said to them. "Stay here and keep watch  
with me."

Then he went forward a little and fell prostrate on the ground. 39

## MATTHEW 26

And he prayed in these words, “My Father, if it is possible, spare me this cup of suffering; but let your will be done, not mine.”

40 Returning to the disciples he found them asleep and said to  
41 Peter, “Could you not stay awake for one hour? Stay awake and  
pray that you escape trial; the spirit is willing, but the flesh is  
weak.”

42 Then he went back and prayed a second time. “My Father,” he  
said, “if I cannot be spared this cup of suffering, but must drink  
it, let your will be done.”

43 And on his return he again found them asleep, for their eyes had  
closed from weariness.

44 So he left them and went back again to pray for a third time as  
he had done before.

45 At the end he came to his disciples and said, “So you still sleep  
and take your rest? But now the time has come. The Son of Man  
46 is to be surrendered to evil men. Rise! We must go. My betrayer  
is already here.”

*Judas dost thou betray me with a kiss?*

47 As he was speaking Judas arrived, one of the Twelve, and with  
him a large band of men, armed with swords and clubs; they had  
been sent by the chief priests and the elders of the people.

48 The traitor had arranged a signal: “The man whom I shall kiss  
is the one. Arrest him.”

49 So without delay he came up to Jesus to say, “Greeting, Master!”  
and he kissed him.

50 Jesus replied, “Friend, do what you are here for.”

*We would rather die in our dread  
Than climb the cross of the moment*

The others then came forward, arrested Jesus, and held him.

51 At that one of those in the company of Jesus reached for his  
sword and drew it; he struck the high priest’s servant and cut  
off his ear.

52 But Jesus said to him, “Put your sword back where it was. Those

who take to the sword perish by the sword. Do you suppose that 53  
I am helpless? Or that if I asked my Father he would not send  
me more than a dozen armies of angels? But how then could the 54  
Scriptures come to pass, which ordain these things?"

*As darker grows the night*

Jesus said to the crowd, "Am I a common criminal that you 55  
come with swords and clubs to arrest me?

Every day I sat teaching in the temple, and you did not arrest me. 56  
But all this has taken place that the Scriptures may be fulfilled."  
Then the disciples all left him and ran away.

*Mine own deare people cry, Away! Away!*

Having arrested Jesus they brought him to the high priest 57  
Caiphas, with whom the doctors of the law and the elders of the  
people sat in council.

Peter followed him, at some distance behind. On reaching the 58  
high priest's palace he went inside and sat there with the servants  
to see how things would go.

Meanwhile, the chief priests and the whole council were looking 59  
for some kind of evidence against Jesus to warrant a death-  
sentence; but they found none, although many witnesses came 60  
forward.

Finally, two came forward and said, "This man once affirmed, 'I 61  
can destroy the temple of God and in three days build it again.' "

The high priest stood up and asked him, "Have you nothing to 62  
say? What is this charge they bring against you?"

But Jesus did not answer.

Then the high priest said to him, "I put you under oath by the 63  
ever-living God that you tell us whether you are the Messiah, the  
Son of God."

Jesus replied, "You have said the words. And I tell you, here- 64  
after you will see the Son of Man sitting at the right hand of God  
and coming in the clouds of heaven."

At that, the high priest tore his robes and said, "He has blas- 65  
phemed! Do we need any more witnesses? You have just heard  
blasphemy. What do you think?"

And the judges replied, "He deserves to die."

66

67 Then they spat in his face and hit him with their fists. Others  
68 struck him with a stick and called out to him, "Prophecy to us,  
Messiah, who it was that struck you!"

*This is the porcelain clay of humankind*

69 Meanwhile Peter was sitting outside in the courtyard when a  
young servant-girl came up and said, "You too were a friend of  
Jesus the Galilean."

70 But Peter denied it before them all, "I don't know what you are  
talking about."

71 Then he went out to the entrance where another girl saw him  
and said to the bystanders, "Here's one who was a friend of  
Jesus the Nazarene."

72 But Peter denied it again, and swore that he never knew the man.

73 And a little later those who were standing around came up to  
Peter and said, "Of course you belong to them! Your very accent  
gives you away."

74 But Peter began to curse and swear, "I tell you, I don't know  
the man."

75 The cock crew at that very moment; and Peter recalled the  
words spoken by Jesus: "Before the cock crows you will deny  
me three times."

**He went outside and wept bitter tears.**

*All who hate me whisper together about me*

27, 1 Early next morning the chief priests and elders of the people  
2 decided their plan for the execution of Jesus. They led him away  
bound and handed him over to Pilate, the Roman governor.

*Then Judas cried out and fled*

*Forth into the night*

3 His betrayer Judas, when he saw that he had been condemned,  
was seized with remorse and brought back the thirty pieces of  
4 silver to the chief priests and the elders. "I have sinned," he  
said, "in betraying an innocent man."  
But they replied, "It's not our concern. Look to it yourself."  
5 Then, flinging the silver pieces on the floor of the temple, he  
went off out and hanged himself.



6 And the priests, taking up the silver, said to one another, "This is blood-money; it cannot be given into the sacred treasury."

*For thirty pence he did my death devise*

7 They decided therefore on a plan; they bought with the silver a plot called the 'potter's field', to be a burial place for strangers.  
8 And that is why the place is called 'Blood-acre' to this day.  
9 Thus the prophecy of Jeremia came true: 'They took the thirty pieces of silver, the price set on the man as it was estimated by  
10 the Israelites, and used them to buy the potter's field, as the Lord directed me.'

*I have become like a broken vessel*

11 Jesus was then brought before the governor; and Pilate asked him, "Are you the king of the Jews?"  
He replied, "As you say."  
12 But to all the charges brought against him by the chief priests and the elders he gave no answer.  
13 Then Pilate said to him, "Do you appreciate how grave are the charges they bring against you?"  
14 But Jesus gave no reply to anything he said.  
And this made the governor wonder very much indeed.

*Some from fear of weakness*

*Some from fear of censure*

15 During the festival it was the governor's custom to release a  
16 prisoner whom the populace requested. A notorious prisoner called Barabbas was in custody at the time.  
17 So Pilate asked the assembled people, "Which of the two do you want me to release to you: Barabbas, or Jesus, the so-called Christ?"  
18 For he knew that he had been handed over out of spite.

*I have suffered in a dream because of him*

19 Meanwhile, as Pilate was sitting in court, his wife sent this message to him: "Have nothing to do with that innocent man. Last night he troubled me very much in a dream."

*I will content the people as I can  
And give up these to them: Behold the man!*

However, the chief priests and the elders persuaded the people 20 to ask for the release of Barabbas and the execution of Jesus. So when the governor addressed them and said: "Which of the 21 two do you want me to release to you?" they replied: "Barabbas!"

Pilate asked, "What am I to do with Jesus, the so-called Christ?" 22 And they all cried out, "Have him crucified!" "What wrong has he done?" asked Pilate. 23 But they shouted all the more, "Have him crucified!"

*Men wash their hands in blood, as best they can  
I find no fault in this just man*

Pilate saw that he was getting nowhere, that rabble-law was in 24 fact prevailing. So he got water and washed his hands before the whole crowd: "To let you see," he said, "that I have no part in the shedding of this man's blood; it's your concern." And the whole populace answered back, "His blood be on us 25 and on our children."

After that Pilate released Barabbas to them and handed Jesus 26 over to be crucified, having had him flogged.

*I was wounded in the house of my friends*

The governor's soldiers then took Jesus into the barracks and 27 gathered up the whole troop. They took off his clothes and 28 dressed him in a scarlet robe; and they plaited a crown of briars 29 and fixed it on his head, and put a cane in his right hand. Then they knelt before him in mockery and called out, "Greeting to the King of the Jews!" They spat on him; and they would take 30 the cane from his hand and strike him on the head.

When they had finished their mockery they took off the robe and 31 dressed him in his own clothes. And they led him out to crucify him.

*My pilgrimage's last mile*

As they were going out they met a man from Cyrene called Simon 32 and they forced him to carry the cross of Jesus.

*I am the man, I suffer'd, I was there*

33 They came to a place called 'Golgotha', that is, the place of the  
34 'skull', and they offered him a drink of wine seasoned with bitter  
juice. He tasted it, but would not drink it.

35 Then they crucified him, and divided his garments by drawing  
36 lots; and they sat down to keep guard.

37 Above his head they fixed a notice, proclaiming the cause for  
which he died: "This is Jesus, the king of the Jews".

38 And along with him they crucified two criminals, one on his right  
and one on his left.

39 As they passed by the cross people hurled abuse at him. Wagging  
40 their heads they would say, "Look at him—the one who was to  
destroy the temple and build it in three days! Why not save your-  
self? If you are the Son of God, come down from the cross."

41 And the chief priests also mocked him, with the doctors of the  
42 law and the elders: "The man who saved others cannot save  
himself," they said. "So this is the king of Israel! Let him come  
43 down now from the cross and we'll believe in him. Did he trust  
in God? Well, let God save him now, if he favours him. For he  
44 claimed to be the Son of God." Even the criminals who were  
crucified with him taunted him in the same way.

*In darkest night*

45 From about midday until three o'clock darkness came over the  
46 whole land. And about three o'clock Jesus called out in a loud  
voice, *Eli, Eli, lema sabachthani*; "**My God, my God, why have**  
**47 you forsaken me?**" On hearing it, some of those standing around  
48 thought he was calling on Elia. One of them came running up,  
got a sponge and filled it with vinegar, fixed it on a cane and  
gave him a drink.

49 The others said, "Leave him! Let's see whether Elia comes to  
save him."

50 But Jesus shouted again in a loud voice and breathed his last.



*Our cold mechanic world awhile was still*

51 Then the curtain of the temple was torn in two, from top to  
52 bottom. The earth shook, the rocks split, the graves opened up,  
and many of the dead saints were awakened.  
53 After the resurrection of Jesus they left their graves and came  
into the holy city, where they appeared to many.  
54 The officer and his men who were keeping guard on Jesus, when  
they saw the earthquake and all the rest, were seized with great  
fear and confessed, "This was indeed the Son of God."

*Their name liveth for evermore*

55 Several women were also present, looking on from a distance;  
they had accompanied Jesus from Galilee and had worked in his  
56 service. Among them were Mary of Magdala and Mary the  
mother of James and Joseph, and the mother of the sons of  
Zebedee.  
57 In the evening there came a man called Joseph, a prosperous  
citizen of Arimathaea who had himself become a disciple of  
Jesus.  
58 He approached Pilate to ask for the body of Jesus; and Pilate  
59 ordered it to be given to him. So Joseph took the body, wrapped  
60 it in a clean linen sheet, and laid it in a new tomb of his own  
which he had excavated from rock. He rolled a heavy stone against  
the tomb entrance and went away.  
61 Mary of Magdala and the other Mary were also present, sitting  
opposite the tomb.

*Weavings of plot and plan*

62 The following day, after the so-called 'day of preparation', the  
63 chief priests and the Pharisees had a meeting with Pilate. They  
said, "We remember, sir, that while this impostor was alive he  
64 said, 'After three days I will rise again.' We pray you to order  
a guard on the tomb until the third day; otherwise his disciples  
may come and steal the body and tell the people, 'he has risen

from the dead'. The final deception would then be worse than the first."

Pilate answered them, "You have a guard. Go and make secure 65 as you know best."

So they went and made the tomb secure, sealing the entrance 66 in the presence of the guard.

*He is not here. He is risen*

After the sabbath rest, when dawn broke on Sunday, Mary of 28, 1 Magdala and the other Mary came to see the grave.

Suddenly there was a violent earthquake; an angel of the Lord 2 had descended from heaven, had come and rolled away the stone and sat on it.

His face shone like lightning and his garments were white as 3 snow.

The guards had been struck down with panic at the sight, and 4 lay as if dead.

And the angel said to the women, "Have no fear! You are looking, I know, for the one who was crucified, Jesus. But he is not 5 here; he has been raised to life, as he foretold. See here the place where he was laid! So go quickly and tell his disciples that he 6 has been raised from the dead and is going on before them to Galilee; there they will see him.

Remember, I have told you!"

*His presence is the stillness. He  
Fills the earth with wonder and mystery*

Then, as they hurried away from the tomb in fear and great joy 8 and ran to tell the news to his disciples, the women were actually met by Jesus himself. He greeted them.

And they, approaching, fell before him in homage, clasping his 9 feet. Jesus then said to them, "Do not be afraid. Go and tell my 10 brothers to leave for Galilee, where they will see me."

*The oldest sins in the newest kind of ways*

While the women were on their way, some of the guards went 11 into the city and reported to the chief priests all that had

12 happened. These then conferred with the elders and decided what they would do. They offered a handsome bribe to the soldiers and suggested, "Say that his disciples came at night and 14 stole the body while you were sleeping. If the rumour comes to the governor's ears, we will have a word with him; we shall 15 see to it that you are not blamed." The soldiers accepted the money and followed their instructions.

And the same story has been current among the Jews to this day.

*And I drank life through God's own death*

16 The eleven disciples made the journey to Galilee, to the mountain appointed by Jesus; there they saw him and did him homage, although some doubted.  
18 And Jesus, coming to them, addressed them in these words: "**Supreme authority has been given me in heaven and on earth.**  
19 Go out, therefore, and make all the peoples of the world disciples of mine; baptize them in the name of the Father and of the Son 20 and of the Holy Spirit, and teach them to observe all that I have commanded you.

Never shall I cease to be with you, until the world ends."





MARK'S  
ACCOUNT



*This is where you start from*

Here begins the gospel of Jesus Christ, the Son of God. 1, 1  
 In Isaia the prophet the words stand written: 2  
 'I am sending my messenger ahead of you,  
 to prepare the road before you.  
 Listen! A voice calls in the desert: 3  
**Make ready the way of the Lord;**  
 make straight his paths.'

*And make a new beginning*

So John the Baptist appeared in the desert proclaiming baptism, 4  
 calling on men to begin a new life, so as to be freed from their  
 sins.  
 The whole country of Judaea and all the people of Jerusalem 5  
 went out to him; they confessed their sins and were baptized  
 by him in the river Jordan.

John wore a shirt of camel hair, tied at the waist with a leather 6  
 belt, and lived on locusts and wild honey.  
 And this was the message he proclaimed: "After me comes a 7  
 man who is stronger than I, the straps of whose shoes I am not  
 worthy to loose. I have baptized you with water; he will baptize 8  
 you with the Holy Spirit."

*His Spirit still doth move  
 On a new way of love*

At this time Jesus came from Nazareth in Galilee and was 9

MARK I

10 baptized by John in the Jordan. As he was coming up from the water he saw the heavens torn open and the Spirit coming down upon him, like a dove. And a voice from heaven said, "You are my beloved Son; you have I chosen."

*'Tis well an old age is out*

12 Immediately afterwards God's Spirit drove him out to the desert. There he remained for forty days, being tempted by Satan and living among the wild beasts. And afterwards angels came to serve him.

*And time to begin a new*

14 When John had been arrested, Jesus came to Galilee and began 15 to preach the gospel of God: "The awaited time has come and the kingdom of God has drawn near; therefore begin a new life and have faith in the gospel."

*With the drawing of this Love and the voice of this Calling*

16 As he was walking along the lake of Galilee, he saw Simon and his brother Andrew at work with a casting-net; they were fishermen.  
17 "Come with me," Jesus said to them, "**and I will make you fishers of men.**"  
18 And they left their nets and followed him.  
  
19 A little further on he saw the sons of Zebedee, James and his 20 brother John, who were also in a boat fixing nets. He called them at once.  
And they left their father Zebedee with the hired workers in the boat and followed him.

*For I greet him the days I meet him, and bless when I understand*

21 They came to the town of Capharnaum; and on the first sabbath 22 Jesus went into the synagogue and began to teach. The people were amazed at his teaching; here was one who taught with authority, unlike the doctors of the law.





There happened to be in their synagogue a man with an evil <sup>23</sup> spirit, who shouted out, "Leave us alone, Jesus of Nazareth! <sup>24</sup> Your coming means destruction for us. Well I know who you are: God's Holy One!"

Jesus reprimanded him, "Silence! Go out from him!" <sup>25</sup>  
At that the unclean spirit lashed the man into a fit and then <sup>26</sup> came out from him with a loud shriek.

And they were all seized by a strange fear and began to ask one <sup>27</sup> another, "What can this be? This is new teaching. Here is one who speaks with authority, who even commands evil spirits and they obey him!"

Soon his name was on everybody's lips, all over the country of <sup>28</sup> Galilee.

*These outstretched feverish hands, this restless heart*

On leaving the synagogue, they went to the house of Simon and <sup>29</sup> Andrew, accompanied by James and John. Simon's mother-in- <sup>30</sup> law was in bed with a fever, so they told him about her. He <sup>31</sup> went to her, took her by the hand, and raised her up; the fever left her, and she began to serve them.

In the cool of the evening, when the sun had set, they brought <sup>32</sup> the sick to him and all who suffered from evil spirits; the whole <sup>33</sup> town was gathered at the door of the house. And he healed large <sup>34</sup> numbers who were afflicted with diseases of every kind, and drove out many demons; but he would not allow the demons to talk, because they knew who he was.

*'Tis not too late to seek a newer world*

It was still dark in the morning when Jesus got up and went out <sup>35</sup> to a deserted place. He was praying there. Presently, Simon and <sup>36</sup> his companions went out after him and told him, when they <sup>37</sup> found him, "**The people are all looking for you.**" But Jesus <sup>38</sup> replied, "Let us move on to the other villages round about. In these too I must preach the gospel; for that is why I have come."

39 So he went round all Galilee, preaching the gospel in their synagogues and driving out demons.

*The face of some strange thing that once was man*

40 A leper once came to him and knelt at his feet, imploring his help, "If only you want to, you can heal me of my disease."

41 And Jesus had pity on him. "Yes, I do," he said, as he reached out his hand to touch him—"Be healed."

42 The man's leprosy disappeared at once and he was healed.

43 And Jesus without more ado gave him a strict warning and sent

44 him off. "See that you tell no one about it," he said. "But go at once and show yourself to the priest. Since you have been cleansed of leprosy, bring with you the offering prescribed by Moses, to certify your cure to them."

45 So the man went off. But he could not hold his tongue; everywhere he went, he had to tell the story. The result was that Jesus could not enter a town without causing a scene; he had to stay outside in country places.  
And yet, people flocked to him from all over.

*New freedom and new hope*

2, 1 Some days later he returned to Capharnaum. And when news had got around that he was at home so many people gathered, as he preached the word to them, that there was no room even

3 at the door. A party then arrived with a cripple, who was carried

4 by four of them, and tried to bring the man up beside Jesus, but could not do so because of the crowd. So they removed some of the roof and made a hole over the place where Jesus was; then they lowered the stretcher through the hole, with the cripple lying on it.

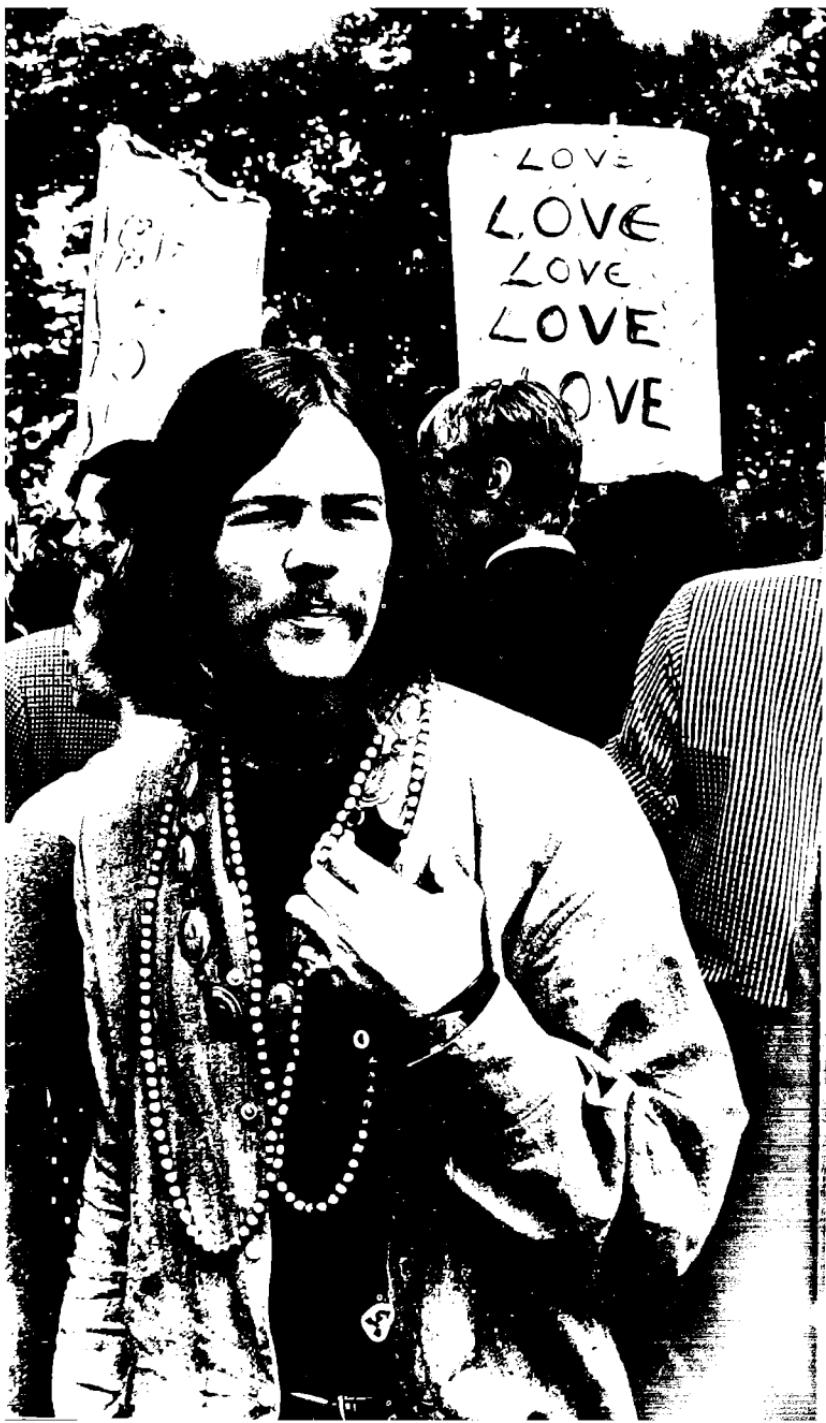
5 And Jesus, struck by their faith, said to the cripple, "Friend, your sins are forgiven."

*Where do miracles begin—or end?*

6 Now there were some doctors of the law sitting around and they

7 began to ask themselves, "How can this man speak such blasphemy? Surely God alone has power to forgive sins?"





But Jesus, knowing immediately what was on their minds, said 8 to them, "Why do you think these thoughts? Which is the easier, 9 to say to the cripple, 'Your sins are forgiven', or to say, 'Stand up, take your stretcher and walk'?

But I will let you see that the Son of Man has power on earth 10 to forgive sins."

So he turned to the cripple and said, "Stand up, I tell you, take 11 your stretcher and go home."

And the man got up, picked up his stretcher immediately, and 12 walked away in the sight of everybody, so that all were utterly astounded and began to praise God, saying to themselves, "Never have we seen the like before!"

*But ah for a man to arise in me!*

Another time he went out by the lake-side; the people all came 13 to him and he was teaching them.

As he was going along he saw Levi, the son of Alphaeus, sitting 14 at the tax-office.

**"Come with me,"** he said to him.

And Levi packed up and went with him,

Afterwards he was a guest at a meal in his house. And a large 15 number of tax-collectors and other outcasts were sitting at table with Jesus and his disciples. (For there were many of this kind, and they were disciples of his.)

Now when the Pharisee doctors of the law saw that Jesus was 16 eating with the sinners and the tax-collectors, they brought it to the notice of his disciples, "You see! He eats with tax-collectors and sinners."

But Jesus was listening and said, "It's not the strong who need 17 the doctor but the sick. I have not come to call the pious but men who are estranged from God."

*New ways—new forms*

John's disciples and the Pharisees were keeping a fast. Some 18 people therefore came to him and asked, "Why is it that the disciples of John and the Pharisees keep fasts, while yours do not?"

And Jesus replied, "Is it right for wedding-guests to fast while 19

they have the bridegroom with them? Surely they cannot do so while they enjoy his presence?

20 But a time will come when the bridegroom will be taken from them; and that will be the time for them to fast.

21 No one patches a piece of unshrunk cloth on an old coat, or the new patch tears away from the old cloth and a bigger hole is made.

22 No one pours new wine into old wine-skins, or the new wine will burst the skins, so that both wine and skins are lost. New wine must be poured into new skins."

*Authentic humanism*

23 One sabbath-day Jesus was passing through wheat-fields; and as they went along his disciples began to pluck ears of grain.

24 The Pharisees said to him, "Now look, why are they doing what is forbidden on the sabbath?"

25 And Jesus replied, "Have you never read the story of what David did in a time of need, when he and his companions were

26 hungry? How he went into the temple of God, during the time of the high priest Abiathar, and ate the holy bread laid out there, sharing it even with his companions?"

27 He added, "The sabbath was made for man, not man for the sabbath. Therefore the Son of Man is Lord even of the sabbath."

*The world that was ours is a world that is ours no more*

3, 1 On another occasion he went into a synagogue where there was

2 a man with a shrivelled hand; and they, in the hope of being able to accuse him, were watching him to see if he would heal him on the sabbath.

3 Jesus said to the man with the shrivelled hand, "Come out here in front."

4 And he said to them, "Which do you think is permitted on the sabbath? To do good or to do wrong? To save life or to kill?" But they would not answer.

5 Jesus looked round angrily on them, pained by their stubbornness, and said to the man, "Put out your hand." And the moment he did so his hand was restored.

The Pharisees then went straight out and consulted with the 6 followers of Herod to see how they would destroy him.

*The still, sad music of humanity*

Jesus therefore went back with his disciples to the lake-side. 7  
 And a huge throng of people from Galilee followed him. Many  
 others too had heard of his wonderful deeds and came in crowds  
 from Judaea and Jerusalem, from Idumaea and across the 8  
 Jordan, and even from the country of Tyre and Sidon.  
 He told his disciples to have a boat ready for him because of the 9  
 large crowd and the danger of their crushing him. He had 10  
 healed so many that all who were afflicted with plagues were  
 crowding in on him, trying to touch him. And the unclean 11  
 spirits, whenever they saw him, would fall down before him and  
 cry out, "You are the Son of God." But Jesus warned them 12  
 strictly not to make him known.

*And the need of a world of men for me*

He went up into the hills and called to him the men of his own 13  
 choice, who then went out to him. And he appointed twelve 14  
 as his special companions, whom he would also send out to 15  
 proclaim the gospel and equip with authority to drive out  
 demons.

So he appointed the Twelve, and gave to Simon the name Peter. 16  
 Then James and his brother John, the sons of Zebedee, whom 17  
 he called Boanerges, "sons of thunder";  
 then Andrew and Philip, 18  
 Bartholomew and Matthew,  
 Thomas and James, the son of Alphaeus;  
 Thaddeus also, and Simon the Zealot,  
 and Judas Iscariot, the man who later betrayed him. 19

*Such a thing  
 Has never happened in our family*

Then he came home. And the crowd gathered round once again, 20  
 giving them no chance even for a meal. So his own people, 21

## MARK 3

hearing of it, came to take him in charge; for it seemed to them that he was out of his mind.

22 But there were also some doctors of the law who had come down from Jerusalem; and it was their opinion that he was possessed by Beelzebub and was driving out demons by the power of the ruler of demons.

### *When evil is knotted and demons fight*

23 Jesus therefore called them over and gave his answer in the form of parables. "How can Satan drive out Satan?" he asked. "If a kingdom is divided against itself, it cannot survive; if a house is divided against itself, it cannot last. And if Satan has become divided by rebelling against himself, he cannot survive; his end has come.

27 No one can enter a strong man's house and rob his property unless he first ties up the strong man. Only then will he be able to rob his house.

### *Desolation final*

28 Believe me, all things will be forgiven to men, no matter what their sins, or the blasphemies they may utter.

29 But the man who slanders the Holy Spirit will never be forgiven; he is guilty of an everlasting sin."

30 This was because they held that he was being used by an unclean spirit.

### *I am my own and not my own*

31 Then his mother and his brothers came and stood waiting outside while they sent someone to call him.

32 There was a crowd sitting round him, and they said to him, "Listen, your mother and your brothers are looking for you outside."

33 But he replied, "Who is my mother? And who are my brothers?"

34 He looked around on those who were sitting in the circle and said, "See them here—my mother and my brothers! Anyone who does the will of God is my brother, and sister, and mother."

*Words of the fragrant portals, dimly starred*

Once again Jesus began to teach by the lake-side. There was such 4, 1 a large throng of people gathered round him that he got into a boat and sat in it on the water, while the people all took position along the lake.

He taught them a great deal in parables, and said in the course 2 of his teaching:

*And of ourselves and of our origins*

“Listen! There was this farmer who went out to sow seed. And as 3 he scattered the seed some of it fell by the path and the birds came and devoured it.

Some seed fell on stony ground where there was little soil, and 5 having so little depth it shot up immediately. But when the sun 6 came up it was scorched; and not being able to take root it withered.

Some seed fell among briars; but the briars grew up and choked 7 it, so that it produced no fruit.

Then there was the seed that fell on good soil and produced a 8 crop; it sprouted and grew and bore fruit, increasing up to thirty, sixty and a hundred times.”

And Jesus said, “The man who has ears to hear with, let him 9 listen.”

*I and this mystery here we stand*

Afterwards, the people around him with the Twelve asked him 10 privately about the parables.

And he said to them, “To you the secret of God’s kingdom has 11 been given; but for the others outside everything is in parables, so that the words of Scripture may come true:

‘for all their seeing they shall not perceive, 12  
and for all their hearing they shall not understand,  
lest they return and be forgiven.’ ”

*O friend! I think they are truly wise  
Who take and take and never analyse*

“So you do not understand this parable?” he said. “How then 13 will you grasp all the parables?

## MARK 4

14 What the sower sows is the word. Sometimes when the word is sown and certain people hear it, Satan immediately comes and snatches up the word that was sown in them; these are the seed that falls by the path.

16 Then there is the seed scattered on the stony ground. Here we have people who, when they listen to the word, receive it with joy. But they have no roots, and therefore they do not last; at the first onset of trial or persecution on account of the word, these immediately fall away.

18 Other hearers of the word are represented by the seed scattered in the briars; here worldly anxieties and the lure of wealth and all the other desires enter in and choke the word, so that it yields no fruit.

20 Then the seed scattered on the good soil stands for those who hear the word and take it to heart and give a rich yield, increasing up to thirty, sixty or a hundred times.”

*Make thy way straight before me*

21 He also said to them, “**Does a light make appearance just to be set under a flour-bin or a bed?** Surely its purpose is to be set on a lamp-stand?

22 For nothing is hidden, if not in order to be revealed; nothing is put under cover, if not in order to be brought to light.

23 Whoever has ears to hear with, let him listen.”

24 And he added, “Pay heed to what you hear. The measure you give will be the measure you will receive—and more besides.

25 The man who starts with reserves will be given more; the man who has no reserves will forfeit even the little he has.”

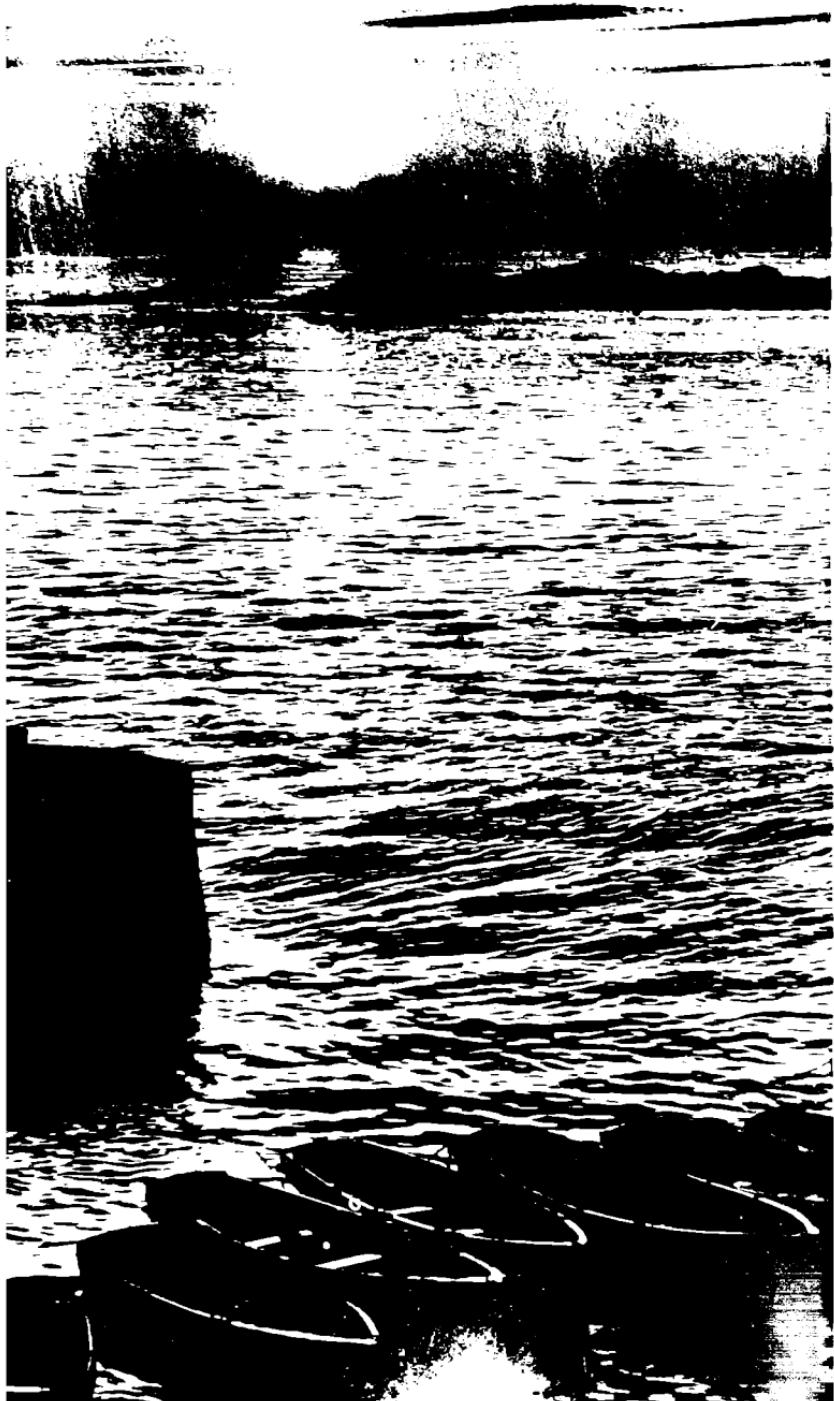
*O God, like Love, revealing yourself in absence*

26 He also said, “God’s kingdom is like a man who scatters seed in his field. While he sleeps every night and gets up every morning, the seed sprouts and grows, and he has no idea what is going on.

28 The earth produces fruit of itself: first the stalk, then the ear,

29 then the full grain in the ear. But the moment the crop is ready, he immediately gets out the reaping hook; for the harvest has come.”





*This is life, the bud  
This is life, the bloom*

"How are we to illustrate the kingdom of God?" he asked. 30  
"Is there any parable we can use for it?

It is like a mustard-seed. When it is sown in the ground the 31  
mustard-seed is the smallest seed on earth. But once it is sown 32  
it grows up to become bigger than any plant in the garden and  
throws out large branches, so that the birds of the sky can roost  
in its shade."

In many other parables like these Jesus spoke the word to them, 33  
so far as they were capable of receiving it. But he only spoke 34  
parables to them; for his own disciples he used explain every-  
thing in private.

*And whither is the Maker of it fled?*

The same day, when it was evening, he said to them, "Let us 35  
cross over to the other side."

The disciples therefore sent the people away and took him in the 36  
boat, just as he was; and other boats too accompanied him.

But a great storm suddenly blew up and the waves began to 37  
beat into the boat, so that it was soon in distress.

And Jesus? He was up in the prow, sleeping on a cushion. They 38  
woke him up. "Master," they said, "how can you just lie there?  
We're going down!"

And he, awakened, commanded the wind and said to the waves, 39  
"Be silent! Calm down!"

And as the wind died there came a great calm.

"Why this anxiety?" he said to them. "Are you still without 40  
faith?"

But they were shaken to the depths. "Who can this be?" they 41  
said to themselves. **"Even the winds and the waves obey him!"**

*To man of all beasts be not thou a stranger*

When they arrived at the other side of the lake, in the country of 5, 1  
the Gerasenes, a man from the tombs came to meet Jesus, as he 2

## MARK 5

3 was stepping out of the boat. He was possessed by an unclean spirit and made the tombs his dwelling-place. No one could  
4 keep him in check—not even with fetters. For he had often been bound hand and foot, but he would break the manacles and wear out the fetters, and nobody had the strength to master him.  
5 Night and day he was inside in the tombs or out on the hills, shrieking and cutting himself with stones.  
6 When he saw Jesus in the distance he ran up and fell in homage  
7 before him, shouting at the top of his voice, “What do you want from me, Jesus Son of the Most-high God? I beg you in God’s name not to torment me.”  
8 For Jesus was commanding the unclean spirit to go out from the man.  
9 “What is your name?” he asked.  
10 And he replied, “My name is Army, for we are many;” and he began to beg Jesus not to send him outside the district.  
  
11 Now there happened to be a large herd of pigs feeding there at  
12 the foot of the hill. So the demons begged him, “Send us into the pigs; let us enter them.”  
13 And Jesus gave them leave.  
Then the unclean spirits came out from the man and took possession of the pigs; and the whole herd of about two thousand rushed headlong down the hill into the lake and was drowned.  
14 The men who were tending them ran off and told the news in the villages and on the farms; and all came out to see what had happened.  
15 When they came to Jesus and saw the possessed man, the one who had the ‘Army’, sitting there clothed and in his right mind,  
16 they were afraid. The story of what had happened to the possessed man and all about the pigs was given them by those who had seen it.  
17 So the people began to request Jesus to leave their district.

*In his will is our peace*

18 When he was about to embark in the boat, the man who had the  
19 demons asked to be allowed to join him. But Jesus refused. “No,” he said. “Go home to your own people and tell them what

the Lord has done for you and the mercy he has shown you."

So he went off and began spreading news all over the Ten Cities 20 of what Jesus had done for him.

And all were wondering.

*Teach me to feel another's woe*

When Jesus had crossed again in the boat to the other side, a 21 large crowd gathered round him, as he was by the lake-side. A synagogue-ruler called Jairus came to him and, on meeting 22 him, fell at his feet to implore his help. "My daughter is dying," 23 he said. "Come and lay your hands on her that she may be saved and live."

Jesus went with him; and a large crowd followed, pressing round 24 him.

Among them was a woman who for twelve years had been 25 troubled by bleeding; she had been under several doctors and 26 had spent all her savings—but to no avail. She had rather become worse. And now she had heard about Jesus; so she came up 27 from behind among the crowd and touched his cloak.

"If only I touch his clothes," she said to herself, "I shall be 28 healed."

Immediately her bleeding dried up at the source; she could feel 29 in her body that she had been cured of her plague.

And Jesus too was aware at the same moment of a force going 30 out from him. Turning round in the middle of the crowd, he asked, "Who has touched my clothes?"

His disciples replied, "The crowd are pressing all round you, 31 as you can see. What do you mean: 'Who has touched me?'"

Nevertheless Jesus kept looking round for the woman who had 32 done this.

And the woman, trembling with fear because she knew what had 33 happened to her, came forward and fell at his feet and told him the whole truth.

He said to her, "Daughter, your faith has saved you. Go in 34 peace; you are healed from your plague."

He was still speaking when people from the synagogue-ruler's 35

house came to tell him, "Your daughter is dead; why bother the Master any further?"

- 36 But Jesus overheard the message and said to the synagogue-ruler, "**Have no fear. Only have faith.**" And he allowed no one to come with him, except Peter, James, and John the brother of James.
- 38 On arrival at the house he found mourners making a din, wailing and keening aloud. He went in and said to them, "Why all this keening and wailing? The child is not dead but asleep." And they laughed at him.
- 40 But he put them all out and went in to where the child was lying, taking with him the child's father and mother and his
- 41 companions. He took her by the hand and said to her, *Talitha kumi*, which means, "Little girl, I tell you, get up!"
- 42 And the little girl got up at once and began to walk, for she was twelve years old.
- 43 They were all beside themselves with utter astonishment. But he gave them strict orders not to let anyone know of it. And he told them to bring her something to eat.

*And his own received him not*

- 6, 1 He left the place and came to his native town, accompanied by his disciples; and when the sabbath came round he taught in their synagogue before a large congregation. They were utterly astounded at what they heard. "Where does this fellow get all this?" they began to ask. "This wisdom that has been given
- 3 him? And all these miracles that have been worked by him? Who is he but the carpenter, the son of Mary, and the brother of James and Joseph, Jude and Simon? Don't his sisters live here in our village?"
- So they took offence at him and refused him faith.
- 4 And Jesus said to them, "A prophet does not go unhonoured except in his native town, among his own relatives and in his own home."
- 5 And he found it impossible to work any miracle there, apart from a few people whom he healed by laying his hands on them.
- 6 He was astonished at their refusal of faith.





*And their eternal dialogue is peace*

He then began to go round the villages teaching. And he also called the Twelve and began to send them out in 7 twos, giving them power over unclean spirits. His instructions 8 were that they should take nothing for the road except a walking-stick: no bread, no knapsack, no money in their belts. They could have shoes on their feet, but were not to wear two 9 shirts. This is what he said to them: "When you go to a place 10 and enter a house, remain there until you are going away. If 11 any place refuses you a welcome, or its people refuse to listen to you, go out from it and shake off the dust from your feet, as evidence against them in judgement."

The disciples went out and proclaimed the gospel, calling on 12 people to begin a new life. They drove out many demons, and 13 also anointed many of the sick with oil and healed them.

*And that unrest which men miscall delight*

Now Herod learnt of all this; for the fame of Jesus had spread 14 abroad. People were saying, "John the Baptist has been raised from the dead; that is why these miracles are being worked by him."

Others thought that he was Elia; others again that he was a 15 prophet, like one of the great prophets.

But when Herod came to hear of it he said, "This is John whom I 16 beheaded; he has been raised to life."

Herod himself had previously arrested John **and had kept 17 him chained in prison**, because of Herodias, his brother Philip's wife, whom he had married.

For John used to say to Herod, "It is not right for you to have your 18 brother's wife."

Herodias therefore had a grudge against John and wanted to 19 have him killed; but she did not get her way. For Herod had a 20 certain fear of John, knowing him to be a good and holy man. He even protected him; and whenever he gave him a hearing he would ask him many questions, and listened to him gladly.

## MARK 6

21 Nevertheless Herodias got her chance. On his birthday Herod gave a banquet for his chief men and officers and the leading people of Galilee. And the same Herodias had a daughter who went in and danced, giving great pleasure to the king and to his guests. "Ask me anything you like," said the king to the girl, "and I will give it to you."

23 He even swore an oath, "Go ahead! Ask me anything—even a half-share of my kingdom—and I will give it to you."

24 So the girl went and said to her mother, "What shall I ask for?" And Herodias replied, "Ask for the head of John the Baptist."

25 The girl then hurried back to the king and said, "I want you to give me right away the head of John the Baptist on a dish."

26 And the king, although grieved by her request, did not want to refuse her, because of his oath and the guests; he immediately sent an executioner, with orders to bring his head.

27 And the man went and beheaded John in prison. He brought the head on a dish and gave it to the girl; and the girl gave it to her mother.

29 When his disciples heard about it, they came and took away his body for burial in a tomb.

### *Come apart and rest awhile*

30 Then the Apostles rejoined Jesus and reported to him all they had done and taught.

31 He said to them, "Come away by yourselves to a quiet place and rest a while." **For so many people were coming and going** that they hardly got time to eat.

### *Holy, divine, good, amiable and sweet*

32 They rowed away in the boat to a desert place, where they would be alone. But they were seen leaving, and others got to hear of it; so the people hurried out from the towns and arrived at the place before them, on foot.

34 On landing from the boat Jesus found a large crowd, and he felt pity for them since they were like sheep without a shepherd. He began to teach them.

35 Then, when it got late, his disciples came to him and said,



## MARK 6

36 "We're in a desert here and it's late in the day. Send them away. Let them go to the farms and villages round about and buy themselves something to eat."

37 "Let you give them food," he replied. And they said, "Are we to go and spend a lot of money on bread, so as to give them food?"

38 "How many loaves have you?" he asked. "Go and see." And having found out they told him, "Five loaves and two fish."

39 Then he told them to get the people sitting in groups on the green grass.

40 So they sat down, grouped in parties of fifties and hundreds.

41 Jesus took in his hands the five loaves and the two fish, raised his eyes to heaven, and spake the grace. He broke the loaves and gave them to the disciples to lay before them, and he also divided the two fish among all.

42 All had a full meal and were satisfied. They gathered up what

44 was left over, including the fish, and filled twelve baskets; and the number of those who had eaten the loaves was five thousand men.

45 Then Jesus made the disciples embark in the boat and go across to Bethsaida ahead of him, while he himself was sending the people away.

46 And having seen them off he went up into the hills to pray.

### *For without thee I cannot live*

47 As night came down the boat was in the middle of the lake and

48 Jesus was alone on the land. He could see them labouring at the oars—for the wind was against them—so he came towards them about three in the morning, walking on the lake; he intended to pass them by.

49 But when they saw him walking on the lake they thought it was a

50 ghost and gave a loud cry; for they had all seen him and were frightened.

And he immediately called out to them, "Do not worry. It is I. Have no fear."

51 Then he climbed into the boat with them, and the wind died.

52 And they were utterly dumbfounded; they had not learned the lesson of the loaves but still had their minds closed.

*Without thee I dare not die*

Having made the crossing they landed at Gennesareth and 53  
 moored there. And when they got out of the boat Jesus was 54  
 immediately recognized; so the people ran around all that district 55  
 and began to bring their sick on stretchers, wherever he was  
 reported to be.

Wherever he went, in all the villages, towns or farms, they laid 56  
 the sick in the open places and would beg him merely to let  
 them touch the fringe of his cloak.

And all who touched him were healed.

*Rank on rank*

*The army of unalterable law*

Having noticed how some of his disciples ate meals with 7, 2  
 'common' or unwashed hands, a party of Pharisees gathered 1  
 round him, along with some doctors of the law who had come  
 from Jerusalem.

For the Pharisees, and indeed all the Jews, hold fast to the 3  
 tradition handed down from the rabbis; they will not eat without  
 rinsing their hands in a handful of water. And when they return 4  
 from the market they will not have a meal without a thorough  
 washing. Many other customs too, such as the ritual washing  
 of cups, pots and bronzes, they hold to by tradition.

The Pharisees and the doctors of the law therefore asked him, 5  
 "Why do your disciples not conform to the tradition handed  
 down from the rabbis? They take their meals with unwashed  
 hands."

And Jesus replied, "How right was Isaia when he prophesied in 6  
 Scripture concerning you hypocrites:

'This people honours me with their lips,  
 but their hearts are far from me;  
 in vain do they worship me,  
 making dogmas of human enactments.'

For you abandon what God has ordained and hold to a tradition 8  
 established by men."

*Making small things important, so that everything  
May be unimportant*

9 He said to them, “How cleverly you set aside God's commandment, in order to observe your tradition!

10 Moses said, 'Honour your father and mother'; and also, 'Whoever curses his father or mother must die.'

11 But according to you, if a man says to his father or mother, 'The support due to you from me has been made *korban*' (in other words, a votive offering), then you no longer allow him to do

12 anything for his father or mother. So you set aside the commandment of God by your tradition, which you have handed on; and you have many similar practices.”

*Man is what he does*

14 He summoned the people to him again and said to them, “Listen to me all of you and understand this: nothing that enters

15 a person from outside can make him unclean. What comes out from a person—this is what makes him unclean.”

17 When he had left the people and come home, his disciples asked him the meaning of the parable.

18 “So you too are without understanding?” he said to them. “Surely you see that nothing can enter a person from outside

19 and make him unclean? Foods do not go into the heart but into the stomach, and are then discharged.” (Thus Jesus declared all foods to be clean.)

20 “No,” he said, “it is rather what comes out from a person that

21 makes him unclean. Evil thoughts have their origin inside, in

22 men's hearts—whence immorality, theft, murder, adultery, greed, malice, debauchery, envy, slander, pride, prejudice.

23 All these evils have their origin in man's heart and render him unclean.”

*The bruised reed he shall not break*

24 Jesus set out from there and went away to the territory of Tyre. He entered a house, desiring that no one should know of it, but he could not remain hidden.





As soon as she had heard about him, a woman whose daughter 25 had an unclean spirit came and flung herself at his feet, begging him to drive out the spirit from her daughter. She was a pagan 26 woman, a native of Syrophoenicia.

Jesus said to her, "The children of the house must get their fill 27 first; it is not right to take the children's bread and throw it to the puppies."

"True, sir," she replied, "but even the puppies under the table 28 can eat the scraps dropped by the children."

And Jesus said to her, "You have spoken well! For this you may 29 go home; the demon has gone out from your daughter."

So she went home to her house and found the child lying in bed 30 and the demon gone out.

*The smouldering wick he shall not quench*

He again left the region of Tyre and came by Sidon to the lake 31 of Galilee, through the country of the Ten Cities.

And they brought him a deaf man who had an impediment in 32 his speech, imploring him to lay his hands on him. Jesus took 33 him aside, away from the crowd.

He put his fingers into his ears and touched his tongue with spittle. Then he raised his eyes to heaven and sighed, as he said 34 to him, *Ephphatha*, which means 'be opened'.

The man's ears were opened at once, his tongue was freed of its 35 impediment, and he was able to speak perfectly.

Jesus forbade them to make it known; but the more he forbade 36 them, the more they spread the news. Their astonishment knew 37 no bounds, as they exclaimed, "He has done all things well; **he makes the deaf to hear and the dumb to speak.**"

*Hungrie I was, and had no meat :  
I did conceit a most delicious feast*

During this period, when a large multitude had again come 8, 1 together and had nothing to eat, Jesus summoned his disciples 2 and said to them, "My heart goes out to these people; they have been with me now for three days and have nothing to eat. If I 3

## MARK 8

let them go home hungry they will get weak on the way, and there are some who have come a great distance."

4 "But this place is a desert," his disciples replied. "What hope is there of getting bread here to feed these people?"

5 "How many loaves have you?" he asked.  
And they said, "Seven."

6 Then he told the people to sit on the ground.

He took the seven loaves and gave thanks; and breaking them, he gave them to the disciples to serve to the people.  
This they did.

7 They also had a few small fish; Jesus said grace over them and told them to serve these as well.

8 And when everyone had eaten and was satisfied, they gathered

9 up the scraps that remained, twelve basketfuls; and there were about four thousand people.

10 He then sent them away, embarked in the boat with his disciples, and came to the region of Dalmanutha.

### *The age demanded an image*

11 The Pharisees came out and began to argue with him, asking him, as a test, to procure a miraculous sign from heaven.

12 Jesus sighed deeply to himself and said, "Why does this generation want a sign? In God's name I tell you, no sign will ever be given to this generation."

13 And he left them there, embarked again, and crossed to the other side.

### *But, rising, open to me for truth's sake*

14 The disciples had forgotten to bring bread and had none with them in the boat except a single loaf.

15 So when Jesus began to warn them, "Be on your guard against

16 the leaven of the Pharisees and the leaven of Herod," they began to think among themselves, "it's because we brought no bread!"

17 But Jesus, knowing their minds, said to them, "Why these thoughts about not having bread? Can you still not see or

18 understand? Or do you suffer total blindness? You have eyes, yet you do not see; you have ears, yet you do not hear. Do you

not remember? When I broke the five loaves among the five thousand, how many hampers did you fill with the scraps you took up?"

They said, "Twelve."

"And when I broke the seven loaves among the four thousand, 20 how many baskets did you fill with the pieces you took up?"

They replied, "Seven."

"Well," he said, "do you still not understand?"

21

*Beggars of light*

When they came to Bethsaida some people came to him with 22 a blind man, begging him to touch him.

So he took the blind man by the hand and led him outside the 23 village. He put spittle on his eyes, laid his hands on him, and asked, "Do you see anything?"

The man gave a look. "Yes," he said, "I see people; I see them 24 like trees walking about."

Once again he laid his hands on his eyes; and when the man 25 looked hard his sight was restored and he saw everything clearly.

Then he sent him home and warned him, "Do not go into the 26 village."

*Two worlds meet in him*

Jesus went out to the villages of Caesarea Philippi, along with 27 his disciples. And as they were travelling he questioned them, "Who do people say that I am?"

They replied, "Some say John the Baptist; others Elia; others 28 again one of the prophets."

"And what about you?" he said. "Who do you say that I am?" 29 Peter answered, "You are the Messiah."

And he strictly forbade them to reveal this to anyone about him. 30

*Nothing in that abyss is alien to you*

He then began to teach them as follows: "The Son of Man must 31 go through great suffering; he will be rejected by the elders, the

chief priests, and the doctors of the law; he will be put to death, and after three days he will rise again."

32 He said this quite openly.

So Peter took him aside and spoke strong words to him.

33 And Jesus, turning round and looking at his disciples, spoke a sharp rebuke to Peter: "Get away from me, you Satan! What you desire is not the will of God but of men."

*The eternal not ourselves that makes for righteousness*

34 Calling the people to him along with his disciples, he said, "Any man who wants to be a follower of mine must renounce

35 himself and take up his cross and come with me. The man who would save his life shall lose it; the man who is prepared to lose his life, for my sake and that of the gospel, shall save it.

36 Even if one gains the whole world, what is the advantage, if one loses one's true life?

37 **Or is there any price one can pay for one's life?**

38 If anyone in this faithless and sinful generation is ashamed of me and of my words, the Son of Man also will be ashamed of him, when he comes with the holy angels in the glory of his Father."

*That day of wrath*

9, 1 He also said, "Believe me, there are some standing here who will not have died before they see the kingdom of God coming in power."

*What think you of the Christ?*

2 After six days Jesus took with him Peter, James, and John, and brought them up a high mountain where they were alone.

3 He was transfigured before their eyes, his clothes becoming extremely white and dazzling, with a whiteness that no bleacher on earth could match.

4 And they saw Moses and Elia talking with Jesus.

5 Peter said to him, "Master, how good it is that we are here! Let us make three tents: one for you, one for Moses, and one for Elia."



6 But Peter really did not know what to say, for they were very  
7 frightened. Then a cloud came, overshadowing them; and from  
the cloud a voice: "This is my beloved Son; listen to him!"  
8 And suddenly, when they looked around, they found Jesus alone  
with them again.

*O truth and pain immortally bound together*

9 As they were coming down from the mountain he warned them  
not to tell anyone of what they had seen, until the Son of Man  
should have risen from the dead.  
10 So the disciples kept the matter to themselves, discussing with  
one another what this 'rising from the dead' could mean.  
11 They asked him, "Why do the doctors of the law say that Elia  
must come first?"  
12 And he replied, "Yes, Elia is to come first and 'restore all  
things'. But why do the Scriptures say of the Son of Man that  
he must go through great suffering and be treated with con-  
13 tempt? Because Elia has already come, I tell you, and they did  
to him all that they wanted, to fulfil what Scripture had predicted  
of him."

*There are no tricks in plain and simple faith*

14 When they reached the disciples they found them in the middle  
of a large crowd, involved in an argument with doctors of the  
15 law. All the people were utterly astounded on seeing Jesus and  
ran forward to greet him.  
16 "What are you discussing with them?" he asked.  
17 And a man from the crowd replied, "Master, I have brought  
18 you my son, afflicted by a spirit that makes him dumb. Whenever  
it seizes him, the spirit tears at him, so that he foams at the mouth  
and grinds his teeth and becomes rigid. I asked your disciples to  
drive it out, but they couldn't."  
19 And Jesus said to them, "O faithless people of this generation!  
How long shall I be with you? How long shall I endure you?  
Bring the boy to me."  
20 They brought him up. And the moment the spirit saw Jesus it  
threw the boy into a fit; he fell to the ground and began to roll  
about, foaming at the mouth.

Jesus asked the father, "How long has he been like this?" 21  
 And the father answered, "Since he was a child. Many a time 22  
 it has tried to throw him into the fire or into water and destroy  
 him. But if you can do anything, have pity on us and help us." 23  
 Jesus replied, "What do you mean: 'if you can do anything'?" 23  
 Nothing is impossible for the man who has faith."

And the boy's father immediately cried out, "I do have faith! 24  
 Help my want of faith!"

Then, seeing that the crowd was closing in, Jesus commanded 25  
 the evil spirit, "Dumb and deaf spirit, go out from him and  
 stay out!"

And the spirit, after convulsing the boy, came out with a shriek. 26  
 He lay there like a corpse and the people began to think he was  
 dead.

But Jesus took him by the hand, raised him up, and he stood 27  
 again.

Later, when he had entered the house, his disciples asked him 28  
 privately, "Why could not we drive out the spirit?"

And he replied, "Only by prayer can this kind be driven out— 29  
 nothing else."

*Weakness shall bind and pierce My hands  
 And make a world for me wherein to die*

They left that place and travelled through Galilee; and Jesus 30  
 did not want it to be known, for he was teaching his disciples.

He said to them, "The Son of Man will be given over to human 31  
 authorities. They will kill him; and three days after his death  
 he will rise again."

But they did not understand what he was talking about and were 32  
 afraid to question him.

*Leave nothing of myself in me*

They came to Capharnaum. And when he arrived home, Jesus 33  
 asked them, "What were you arguing about on the way?"

But they said nothing, because on the way they had been 34  
 squabbling as to which of them was the greatest.

Jesus therefore, having sat down, called over the Twelve and 35

said to them, “If anyone wants to be the first, he must be the last of all and the servant of all.”

36 He then took a child and set him in front of them; and putting  
37 his arm round him, he said, “Whoever receives one of these  
little children in my name receives me; and whoever receives  
me receives him who sent me.”

*The love nothing, the fear all*

38 On one occasion John reported to him, “Master, we saw a man  
who doesn’t belong to our group driving out demons in your  
name; we tried to stop him because he wasn’t one of ours.”  
39 But Jesus said, “You should not stop him; no man can work a  
miracle in my name and be ready in the same breath to speak  
40 evil of me. Whoever is not against us is on our side.

*Rightly to be great*

41 Believe me, if ever a man gives you a cup of water, because you  
belong to Christ, he shall not go unrewarded.  
42 But if anyone destroys the faith of one of these little ones, it  
would be better for him to be pitched into the sea with a millstone  
tied about his neck.

*The thorns of death and shame*

43 If your hand is a danger to you, cut it off; better for you to  
enter life maimed than to keep both hands and go to the un-  
quenching fire of hell.  
45 **And if your foot is a danger to you**, cut it off; better for you to  
enter life crippled than to keep both feet and be thrown into hell.  
47 And if your eye is a danger to you, pluck it out; better for you  
with one eye to enter the kingdom of God than with both eyes  
to be cast into hell, to everlasting pain and anguish.  
49 For everyone shall be salted with fire.

*Nothing is enough*

50 Salt is good. But if salt loses its quality, is there anything you  
can do to restore it?  
Have salt in you. And keep peace with one another.”





*Which of us two then is the worse off?  
And how did this separation come about?*

Jesus left there and came to the borders of Judaea and the 10, 1 Transjordan, where crowds flocked to him again and he began as usual to teach them.

Some Pharisees came up to him and asked if it was lawful for a 2 husband to divorce his wife, wanting to test him.

And in reply he asked them, "What did Moses command you?" 3 They said, "Moses allowed a man to divorce his wife by giving 4 her a written dismissal."

And Jesus said to them, "It was by reason of your stubborn 5 disobedience that Moses wrote you this commandment. But 6 originally, at the creation, God made mankind male and female; and for this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and 7 become one with his wife. **So they are no longer two persons but one being;** and therefore the bond created by God may not 9 be loosed by man."

When they were back in the house his disciples asked him about 10 this.

And he said to them, "Any man who divorces his wife and 11 marries another commits adultery against her; any wife who 12 divorces her husband and marries another commits adultery."

*What thou lov'st well is thy true heritage*

There were some who wanted to bring children to him, to have 13 him touch them, but the disciples warned them off.

Jesus however was angry when he saw it, and said to the disciples, 14 "Let the children come to me, and do not stop them; for God's kingdom belongs to their kind.

Believe me, if a man does not receive God's kingdom as a child, 15 he shall not go into it."

And he embraced them in his arms, laid his hands on them, and 16 blessed them.

*The apprehension of the Good*

When he was taking to the road again a man ran up and fell on 17 his knees before him. "Good master," he asked, "what must I do to enter eternal life?"

18 And Jesus replied, "Why do you call me good? God alone is the  
 19 Good—no one else. You know the commandments: 'Do not  
 kill, do not commit adultery, do not steal, do not give false  
 witness, do not commit fraud, honour your father and mother.' "

20 But the man answered, "Master, all these I have observed from  
 my youth."

21 And Jesus looked him in the face and liked him. "You lack only  
 one thing," he said. "Go and sell everything you own. Give  
 the money to the poor, and you will have riches in heaven. Then  
 come and follow me."

22 But as soon as he heard this, the man's face fell and he went  
 away in sorrow. For he was very wealthy.

*If thou art rich, thou'rt poor*

23 Looking round upon his disciples, Jesus said to them, "How hard  
 it will be for the wealthy to enter God's kingdom."

24 And they were amazed at his words.  
 But he said again, "My friends, how hard it is to enter God's  
 25 kingdom. It is easier for a camel to pass through the eye of a  
 needle than for a wealthy person to enter God's kingdom."

26 And they were still more amazed and said to one another,  
 "**Can anyone then be saved at all?**"

27 But Jesus, fixing his eyes on them, replied, "For men it is  
 impossible, but not for God. For God everything is possible."

*The one remains, the many change and pass*

28 Then Peter spoke up: "See now, we have left all things in order  
 to follow you."

29 And Jesus said, "Believe me, no man gives up home, or brothers,  
 or sisters, or mother, or father, or children, or lands, for my  
 30 sake and that of the gospel, who will not receive a rich reward:  
 now, and in this world, houses and brothers and sisters and  
 mothers and children and lands—as well as persecution—and in  
 the world to come eternal life.

31 And many who are first will be last; and the last will be first."

*God's creation became my cross*

32 They were on the road, heading up to Jerusalem, with Jesus





leading the way. A sense of foreboding hung over them; and those who followed behind were afraid. Once again he took the <sup>33</sup> Twelve aside and told them the fate that awaited him. "See, we are now going up to Jerusalem. The Son of Man will be given up to the chief priests and the doctors of the law. They will condemn him to death and hand him over to the pagans. By these he will be mocked, spat upon, cruelly beaten, and put <sup>34</sup> to death. And after three days he will rise to life."

*Ill-weaved ambition*

James and John, the sons of Zebedee, came to him and said, <sup>35</sup> "Master, we would like you to do something for us."

"What do you want me to do for you?" he asked. <sup>36</sup>

And they replied, "Grant that we may sit, the one on your right <sup>37</sup> and the other on your left, when you come to your glory."

But Jesus said to them, "You do not know what you are asking. <sup>38</sup> Can you drink the cup that I drink? Can you suffer the baptism that I suffer?"

They replied, "We can." <sup>39</sup>

And Jesus said to them, "The cup that I drink you too will drink; and the baptism that I suffer you too will suffer. But to <sup>40</sup> sit at my right hand or my left is not mine to give; it is for those for whom it has been reserved."

When the other ten heard about this they were angry with James <sup>41</sup> and John.

*The mocking taunt, See then whether you shall be master?*

So Jesus called them over and said to them, "You know that <sup>42</sup> those who pass as rulers of the pagan peoples trample on their rights and their great men wield absolute power over them. But with you it must be different. Whoever wants to rank high <sup>43</sup> among you **must be your servant**; and whoever wants to be the <sup>44</sup> first among you must be the slave of all. For the Son of Man too <sup>45</sup> did not come to be served but to serve, and to give his life in sacrifice for all."

*Tears pouring from this face of stone*

46 They entered Jericho. And as he was leaving Jericho with his disciples and a large crowd, the son of Timaeus, a blind beggar  
 47 with the name Bartimaeus, was sitting at the roadside. When he heard that it was Jesus of Nazareth he began to shout out, "Son of David, Jesus, have pity on me!"  
 48 Several turned on him to make him hold his tongue. But he only shouted the more, "Son of David, Jesus, have pity on me!"  
 49 Jesus stopped and said, "Call him here." So they said to the blind man, "Get up! He's calling you. Cheer up!"  
 50 And he threw off his cloak, sprang to his feet, and came to Jesus.  
 51 "What do you want me to do for you?" he asked. And the blind man replied, "*Rabbuni—Master—if only I could see again.*"  
 52 He said to him, "Go! Your faith has saved you."  
 53 And immediately he could see again and began to follow him along the road.

*Blessed with the soft phrase of peace*

11, 1 As they approached Jerusalem and came to Bethphage and Bethany at the Mount of Olives, Jesus sent ahead two of his  
 2 disciples with the following instructions: "Go into the village facing you and as soon as you enter it you will find a donkey tethered on which no man has yet ridden. Untie it and bring it  
 3 to me. If anyone asks you what you are doing, say to him, 'The Lord has need of it, but will send it back without delay.'"  
 4 The disciples went off and found a donkey tethered outside a door on the street; they untied it.  
 5 Some of the people standing around said to them, "What are you doing there, untying the donkey?"  
 6 So they told them what Jesus had said and were allowed to go ahead.  
 7 When they had brought the donkey to Jesus they flung their  
 8 coats on its back, and he sat on it. Many spread their coats on the road. Others cut bundles of green stuff in the fields and



9 scattered them. Some led the way in front of Jesus, others followed behind, and they shouted:  
“Praise to God!  
A blessing on him who comes in the name of the Lord.  
10 A blessing on the coming kingdom of our father, David.  
Praise to God in heaven!”

11 So he entered Jerusalem and went to the temple. And having looked around at what was going on, he went out to Bethany with the Twelve; for it was now late.

*We call it health when we find no symptom  
Of illness*

12 Next day, as they were leaving Bethany, Jesus felt hungry. On seeing in the near distance a fig-tree covered with leaves, he went over to it to see if he would find anything on it; but when he came to it he found nothing on it except leaves, for it was not the fig-season.  
14 He said to the tree, “May nobody ever eat fruit from you again.”  
And the disciples were listening.

*Zeal for thy house hath consumed me*

15 They arrived in Jerusalem, and Jesus entered the temple and began to drive out the people who were buying and selling in the holy place; he overturned the tables of the money-changers  
16 and the seats of the pigeon-dealers, and would not allow goods to be carried through the temple-area.  
17 And he explained in his teaching, “Does it not stand written in Scripture, ‘My house shall be called a house of prayer for all the peoples’?  
But you have made it a hide-out for thieves.”

18 When they heard about this, the chief priests and the doctors of the law were most anxious to find a way of doing away with him; but they had to proceed cautiously, because the people were very impressed by his teaching.  
19 In the evening Jesus left and went outside the city.

*How can I dream except beyond this life?*

As they were passing by early next morning they saw the fig-tree 20 withered from the roots.

And Peter, remembering, said to Jesus, "Look, Master, the fig-tree you cursed has withered." 21

Jesus replied, "Have faith in God. Believe me, if one should 22 say to this mountain here, 'Be lifted and thrown into the sea,' without any doubt in his heart, but with faith that what he prays for is being done, he shall have it done.

I tell you, therefore, anything you ask for in prayer, believe that 24 you have received it, and it shall be yours.

But whenever you stand in prayer, first forgive the grievances 25 you have against others; only then will your Father in heaven 26 forgive you your own misdeeds."

*But there are shadows in my mind*

Once again they arrived in Jerusalem. And as Jesus was walking 27 about in the temple, the chief priests, the doctors of the law, and the elders approached him and asked, "What is your authority 28 for doing these things? Or who gave you authority to act in this way?"

Jesus said to them, "I too have a question for you, and if you 29 answer me I will let you know by what authority I do these things: Tell me, was the baptism of John from God or from 30 men?"

So they threshed it out among themselves: "Shall we say it was 31 from God? But he will surely say, 'Why did you not put faith in him?' Or shall we say it was from men?"—but they were 32 afraid of the people; for everyone held that John was really a prophet.

So they gave as their reply to Jesus, "We don't know." 33

And he answered, "Neither will I let you know by what authority I do these things."

*Full of one passion, vengeance, rage or fear*

He began to speak to them in figures:

"There was this man who planted a vineyard. Having fenced it

12, 1

with a wall and dug a wine-press and built a watch-tower, he leased his vineyard to tenants and went abroad.

- 2 In due course he sent a servant to the tenants to collect from them
- 3 his share of the harvest; but they gave the servant a threshing and sent him back empty-handed.
- 4 He sent another servant, but they beat him on the head and affronted him.
- 5 Yet another he sent, but they killed him; and several others, but these too they either beat up or killed.
- 6 When only one still remained to him—his own son whom he loved—he sent him last of all, thinking to himself, ‘They will respect my son.’
- 7 But these tenants had other thoughts: ‘This is the heir! Let’s kill him and the property will be ours.’
- 8 So they seized and killed him and threw his body out of the vineyard.

9 Now what will the owner of that vineyard do?  
He will come and destroy those tenants and give the vineyard to others.

- 10 Have you not read in Scripture:  
‘The stone which the builders rejected  
has itself become the corner-stone.
- 11 By the Lord has this been done,  
and our eyes can hardly believe it.’?”

12 And they were most anxious to arrest him, knowing that he had spoken this parable against themselves, but they were afraid of the people.  
So they left him alone and went off.

*Breathing his law and heaven’s tranquillity*

- 13 However, they sent a party of Pharisees and followers of Herod to trap him in his speech.
- 14 So these came up and said to him, “Master, we know that you are an honest man and not worried about what people think; you do not play up to important folk but teach the way of God in all truth.

What then? Is it right to pay tax to the Emperor? Shall we pay or shall we not?"

And Jesus, knowing what was behind it, said to them, "So you 15 would trap me! Bring me a coin, please. I would like to see one." They brought him one. 16

Then he asked them, "Whose is this image? And whose is the name inscribed?"

They replied, "Caesar's."

And he said to them, "Give then to Caesar what is Caesar's, 17 and to God what is God's."

And they could not withhold their admiration of him.

*Gleams that untravelled world*

A party of the Sadducees (the people who hold that there is no 18 resurrection) came up and put a case to him: "Master, Moses 19 laid it down that if there are brothers and one of them dies, leaving a wife but no child, another brother should marry the wife and raise up a family to the dead man.

Now there were once seven brothers. When the first had married 20 a wife and died without leaving children, then the second married 21 her, and he too died without leaving children. In the same way, 22 the third and the rest of the seven all died without leaving children; and in the end the wife died.

Which of them, now, will have her as wife on the day of resurrec- 23 tion, when all rise again? For all seven had married her."

And Jesus replied, "How wrong you are! And for what other 24 reason than that you are ignorant of the Scriptures and of the power of God? When men and women rise from the dead they 25 do not marry; they are like angels in heaven.

As for the dead and their resurrection to life, have you not read 26 in the book of Moses, where he speaks of the burning bush, how God said to him, 'I am the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, the God of Jacob'?

Therefore he is not a God of the dead, but of the living. You 27 are very wrong indeed!"

*Give all to love*

A doctor of the law, who had overheard the discussion and 28

observed how ably Jesus had answered, came up and asked him, “Which of all the commandments is the most important?”

29 And Jesus replied, “The most important commandment is this:

30 ‘Hear, O Israel, the Lord our God is one Lord. You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart and all your soul and all

31 your mind and all your strength.’ And the second is this: ‘**You shall love your neighbour as yourself.**’ There is no other commandment greater than these.”

32 The doctor of the law said to him, “You are right, Master. What you say is true: ‘There is one God, and no other apart from him’; and what you say about ‘loving him with all one’s heart and all

33 one’s mind and all one’s strength’, and about ‘loving one’s neighbour as oneself.’ This is more important than all holocausts or sacrifices.”

34 Jesus observed how intelligently he answered and said to him, “You are not far from the kingdom of God.”

And from then on no one dared to put him any more questions.

*One small page of Truth's manuscript made clear*

35 But Jesus turned to them and asked, as he was teaching in the temple, “On what basis do the doctors of the law hold that the

36 Messiah is David’s Son? For the inspired David himself wrote: ‘The Lord said to my lord: Sit at my right hand, until I lay your enemies under your feet.’

37 If David calls him ‘Lord’, how can the Messiah be David’s son?”

And the large crowd of people listened to him with pleasure.

*Here's a world of pomp and state*

38 He said in the course of his teaching, “Beware of the doctors of the law! They like to parade in long robes and to be greeted respectfully in public; they like to have the first seats in the

39 synagogues and the top places at table; they know how to devour the property of widows, but they can also put on a show of

40 praying long prayers.

For them judgement will be all the more severe.”





*Gold is worth but gold;  
Love's worth love*

He was sitting opposite the temple-treasury, watching the people 41 put their money into it. Several rich people threw in large 42 amounts; and a poor widow also came and threw in a couple of small coins, equal to a few pence.

Jesus called over his disciples and said to them, “Believe me, 43 this poor widow has given more to the treasury than all the others. They gave what they all could well afford; but she in her poverty 44 gave everything she had—her whole living.”

*A time to every purpose under heaven*

As he was leaving the temple one of his disciples said to him, 13, 1 “Look, Master! There's stonework for you! Look at those for buildings!”

And Jesus said to him: “You see these splendid buildings? Not 2 a stone will be left on a stone. All will be torn asunder.”

*A time to be born and a time to die*

When he was sitting on the Mount of Olives, opposite the temple, 3 Peter, James, John and Andrew came by themselves to ask him, “Tell us when will these things happen? And what sign will there 4 be of this universal consummation?”

Jesus replied, “Watch lest anyone lead you astray. Many will 5 come claiming my authority and saying, ‘I am the one’, and will lead many astray. And when you hear news of wars and rumours 7 of wars, do not be alarmed. For all this must happen; but it does not signify the end.

Nation will rise against nation, kingdom against kingdom; there 8 will be earthquakes and famines in many places. All this is but the beginning of the birth-pangs.

*A time to plant*

Then you must look to yourselves. You will be arraigned in 9 courts, and flogged in synagogues, and brought before governors and kings, to testify against them on my behalf.

- 10 And the gospel must first have been preached to all the peoples.
- 11 Whenever you are handed over and led away, do not be anxious about what you are going to say. When the moment comes, speak whatever you are inspired to speak; for the Holy Spirit will be speaking—not you.
- 12 Brother will surrender brother to death, and a father his child; children will rise against their parents and send them to death.
- 13 You will be hated by all men because of my name; but the man who holds out to the end will be saved.

*And a time to pluck up*

- 14 But as soon as you see the ‘desecrating horror’ standing where he ought not to be—if the reader but take note—then let the people of Judaea make for the mountains.
- 15 Whoever is up on the roof, let him not come down or re-enter
- 16 his house looking for something; whoever is out in the fields, let
- 17 him not return for his coat. And alas for women with child, or
- 18 with infants at the breast, when those days come! Let your prayer be that it happen not in winter-time.
- 19 For these will be days of great affliction, such as the world has never seen since the beginning of God’s creation, and never will
- 20 see again. If the Lord had not cut them short, no living being would be saved; but for the sake of the elect whom he has chosen, God has cut those days short.
- 21 If anyone says to you then, ‘See the Messiah here!’ or ‘See him
- 22 there!’ do not believe it; for false Messiahs and false prophets will appear, and will work great miracles and portents, to lead even the chosen astray—if that were possible.
- 23 Therefore keep your eyes open. I have told you all beforehand.

*The great stage-curtain about to drop*

- 24 A time will come however after that great affliction when the sun will be darkened and the moon will no longer give its light,
- 25 when the stars will fall from the sky and the heavenly bodies
- 26 will be shaken. And then the Son of Man will be seen coming
- 27 in the clouds with great power and splendour; he will send out the angels and will gather the chosen from the four winds, from the ends of the earth to the ends of heaven.

*Though I tarry, wait for me, trust me, watch and pray*

Learn a lesson from the fig-tree: When its shoots are tender and 28  
its leaves begin to sprout you know that summer is near.  
So too, when you see these things happen, let it be known to you 29  
that the end is near—at the very gates.

Believe me, the people of this generation will not have passed 30  
away before all these things come to pass. Heaven and earth will 31  
pass away; my words will not pass away.

And yet that day or the hour no one knows, not even the angels 32  
in heaven, not even the Son, but only the Father.

Therefore keep your eyes open and stay awake; for you do not 33  
know when the time will be.

So too, when a man leaves home and goes abroad, he puts his 34  
servants in charge, and gives each one his work to do, and tells  
the porter to stay awake.

Stay awake, therefore. For you do not know when the master 35  
of the house is going to come, whether in the evening or at  
midnight, whether at cock-crow or at dawn. If he comes without 36  
warning, let him not find you asleep.

And what I say to you I say to all: Stay awake!” 37

*All except only Love. Love had died long ago*

The feast of the pasch and the unleavened bread was in two 14, 1  
days time. And the chief priests and the doctors of the law were  
trying to devise some scheme to have Jesus arrested and put to  
death. But they decided, “Not during the festival, or the people 2  
may start a riot.”

*Love is here, love is not dumb*

Then Jesus was at dinner in the house of Simon the leper, at 3  
Bethany. And a woman came with an alabaster flask of pure and  
very expensive perfume, which she poured on his head, having  
broken open the flask.

Now some people were indignant over this and said to one 4  
another, “Why this waste of expensive perfume? This kind 5

could have been sold at a high price and the money given to the poor."

And they criticized the woman harshly.

6 But Jesus said, "Leave her alone. Must you be unkind to her?

7 What she has done for me is a noble deed. The poor you always have at hand, to attend to as often as you like, but I am not here always.

8 She has done all that she could; she has anointed my body beforehand for burial.

9 And I assure you of this: wherever the gospel will be preached in the whole world, what she has done will also be told in remembrance of her."

*One of the Twelve*

10 Then Judas Iscariot, who belonged to the Twelve, went to the chief priests to betray Jesus to them. Having heard his plan they were pleased and promised him money.

So Judas was keeping an eye out for a suitable chance to betray him.

*This day shall be for you a memorial day*

12 On the first day of the festival known as the unleavened bread it was the custom to sacrifice the paschal lamb. His disciples therefore asked Jesus, "Where do you wish us to go and prepare the pasch for you?"

13 And Jesus sent off two of them, with the following instructions: "Go into the city and you will be met by a man carrying a jar

14 of water. Follow him to the house he will enter, and say to the owner, 'The Master has sent us to ask, Where is the dining-room reserved for me, in which I am to eat the pasch with my 15 disciples?' He will show you a large room upstairs, with a table set out in readiness. There you shall prepare for us."

16 The disciples went off and on entering the city found everything as he had told them; so they prepared the pasch.

*Even my bosom friend in whom I trusted*

17 In the evening he came there with the Twelve.

And while they were at table Jesus said in the course of the meal, 18  
 "I tell you this, one of you—one who shares meals with me—is  
 going to betray me."

The disciples were very distressed and began to ask him, one 19  
 after another, "Surely not I?"

He replied, "One of the Twelve, one who eats with me from the 20  
 same dish. For the Son of Man goes his way, as the Scriptures 21  
 have laid down for him; but woe to the man by whom the Son  
 of Man is betrayed! It would have been better for that man not  
 to have been born."

*A memorial of his death*

During the meal Jesus took bread and spoke the grace. And as 22  
 he broke the bread and gave it to them, he said, "Take it; this  
 is my body."

Then he took a cup of wine and spoke the thanksgiving; he gave 23  
 it to them and they all drank from it.

And he said, "This is my blood of the covenant which is shed 24  
 for many.

I assure you, never again shall I drink of the fruit of the vine 25  
 until that day—the day when I shall drink it new in the kingdom  
 of God."

*Be thine the glory and be mine the shame*

Having sung the hymn, they went out to the Mount of Olives. 26  
 And Jesus said to them, "All of you will fall away because of me. 27  
 For it is written, 'I will strike the shepherd and the sheep will 28  
 be scattered.' But after my resurrection I will go on before you  
 to Galilee."

Peter said to him: "All may fall, but not I." 29

And Jesus answered, "The truth is, I tell you, that you are the 30  
 one who will deny me three times—this very night before the  
 cock crows twice."

Peter, however, spoke with even greater assurance, "Even if I 31  
 must die with you I will not deny you!"

And the others were equally confident.

*Wheresoever thou art our agony will find thee*

32 They came to a place called Gethsemane; and Jesus said to his disciples, "Sit here while I pray."

33 He took Peter, James, and John along with him; and an agony of distress and anguish came upon him. He said to them, "My heart grieves even to breaking point. Wait here and stay awake."

35 He then went forward a little and fell to the ground. And he prayed God to spare him, if it were possible, the hour of suffering.

36 "Abba, Father," he said, "all things are in your power. Take this cup from me. Nevertheless, let your will be done, not mine."

37 On coming back he found them asleep. And he said to Peter, "Simon, are you sleeping? Have you not been able to stay awake for one hour? Stay awake, all of you, and pray that you escape trial. The spirit is willing, but the flesh is weak."

39 He went away a second time and prayed as before. And on his return he again found them asleep, for their eyes were weighed down. They did not know what to answer him.

41 Returning for a third time he said, "So you still sleep and take your rest! It is enough. **The hour has come for the Son of Man to be given over to evil men.**

42 Rise! We must go. See, my betrayer is already here."

*They use that power against me which I gave*

43 Judas, one of the Twelve, arrived as he was speaking, and with him a crowd of men armed with swords and clubs, who had been sent by the chief priests, the doctors of the law and the elders.

44 His betrayer had agreed with them on a signal: "The one whom I shall kiss is the man. Arrest him and lead him away under guard."

45 So when he arrived Judas immediately went up to him and said,

46 "Rabbi!" and he kissed him. The others seized Jesus and held him.

47 One of those who were standing by drew his sword, struck the high priest's servant, and cut off his ear.

48 And Jesus said to them, "Am I a common criminal that you

49 have come with swords and clubs to arrest me? Every day I was



with you teaching in the temple, and you did not arrest me; but the Scriptures must be fulfilled."

50 Then all of them ran away and left him. A youth followed him with a sheet wrapped about his naked body, and they caught him; but he let go of the sheet and ran away naked.

*The Princes of my people make a head  
Against their maker*

53 Jesus was led away to the high priest; and all the priests, elders, and doctors of the law were gathered in council.

54 Peter followed him at a distance into the high priest's courtyard; he was sitting there along with the attendants, warming himself at the fire.

55 And the chief priests and all the council were trying to find evidence against Jesus to warrant a sentence of death, but they

56 could not find any. Several did come forward with false evidence

57 against him, but their testimonies did not agree. However, there

58 were some who got up and testified falsely as follows: "We heard this man speak these words: 'I will destroy this temple made with hands, and in three days will build another not made with hands.' "

59 But even on this point their testimonies did not agree.

60 So the high priest stood up before the council and asked Jesus, "Have you nothing to say? What charge is this that these bring against you?"

61 Jesus remained silent and gave no answer.

The high priest questioned him again and asked, "Are you the Messiah, the Son of God?"

62 And Jesus answered, "I am. You will see the Son of Man seated at the right hand of God and coming in the clouds of heaven."

63 At that the high priest tore his clothes and said, "Do we need any more witnesses? You have heard the blasphemy. What is your verdict?"

64 And they, unanimously, judged him deserving of death.

65 Some began to spit on him. Having blindfolded him they would strike him and call out, "Tell us who struck you!"

And the attendants, as they took him in charge, showered blows on him.

*But who can plumb the sinking of that soul?*

Meanwhile Peter was below in the courtyard, when one of the 66 servant-girls came by and saw him warming himself. She looked 67 closely at him and said, "You were a friend of this Jesus from Nazareth."

Peter denied it, "I have no idea what you are talking about." 68 And he went out to the entrance-court. 69

The girl, however, on seeing him there, said again to those standing around, "This man belongs to them."

But he again denied it. 70

And shortly afterwards the bystanders said to Peter, "Of course you belong to them! Aren't you from Galilee?"

Peter began to curse and to swear, "I tell you, I don't know this 71 man you are talking about."

The cock then crowed a second time. 72

And Peter remembered how Jesus had said to him, "Before the cock crows twice you will deny me three times."

He began to weep.

*But when I view abroad both Regiments,  
The worlds, and thine*

First thing in the morning the chief priests, in plenary session 15, 1 with the elders and the doctors of the law, reached a decision. They had Jesus led away in chains and handed him over to Pilate.

Pilate asked him, "Are you the king of the Jews?" 2

And Jesus replied, "The words are yours."

The chief priests were bringing grave charges against him. 3

So Pilate again questioned him, "Have you nothing to answer?" 4

You realize how serious are the charges they bring?"

But Jesus gave no further answer; and Pilate could not understand it. 5

*My silence rather doth augment their crie*

During the festival it was Pilate's custom to release a prisoner at 6 the request of the people. A man called Barabbas was being held 7

in custody, along with rioters who had committed murder in the uprising.

- 8 So the people went up to Pilate, and began to ask for his usual concession. Pilate said in reply, "Would you like me to release to you the King of the Jews?" For he knew that the priests had handed him over out of spite.
- 11 But the chief priests stirred up the people to ask instead for the release of Barabbas.
- 12 Pilate therefore addressed them again and asked, "What shall I do with the man whom you call the 'King of the Jews'?"
- 13 They shouted back, "Crucify him!"
- 14 "What wrong has he done?" asked Pilate.  
And they shouted still louder, "Crucify him!"
- 15 So Pilate, in his desire to satisfy the crowd, released Barabbas to them. Jesus he handed over to be crucified, having had him flogged.

*Of sharp thorn I have worn a crown on my head*

- 16 The soldiers led him away inside the palace called the praetorium and gathered up the whole troop. First they dressed him in a purple robe; then they plaited a crown of thorns and fixed it on his head; and they began to salute him, "Greeting to the king of the Jews!" They also struck him on the head with a cane, and spat on him, and bent their knees to him in pretended homage.
- 20 When they had finished their mockery, they took off the purple robe and dressed him in his own clothes; and they led him out to crucify him.

*The decreed burden of each mortall Saint*

- 21 They forced a passer-by who was coming from the country—Simon of Cyrene, the father of Alexander and Rufus—to carry his cross.

*For you, for me*

- 22 They bring him to a place called Golgotha (a word which means 'the place of the skull'); they offer him wine drugged with myrrh, which he would not take.

And they crucify him.

24

Then they divide his clothes by drawing lots to see what each would get.

And it was about nine o'clock, as they crucified him.

25

A notice proclaimed the cause for which he died; on it was written, THE KING OF THE JEWS.

And along with him they crucify two criminals, one on his right and one on his left.

As they passed by the cross people took occasion to jeer at him. Wagging their heads, they would say, "Ha! The one who destroys the temple and in three days builds it again! Save yourself and come down from the cross."

And the chief priests, along with the doctors of the law, also mocked him, saying to one another, "The man who saved others cannot save himself—this Messiah, this King of Israel! Let him now come down from the cross; when we see it, then we'll believe!"

Even the two who were crucified with him taunted him.

*Death has done all death can*

About midday darkness came over the whole land and lasted for some three hours. And at three o'clock Jesus cried in a loud voice, *Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani*, which means: "My God, my God, why have you forsaken me?"

Hearing him, some of those standing around said, "Listen, he is calling Elia."

And one of them ran up, filled a sponge with vinegar, fixed it on a cane and gave him a drink. "Let's see whether Elia comes to take him down," he said.

But Jesus gave a loud cry and breathed his last.

37

*Curtains of rock  
And tears of stone*

Then the curtain of the temple was torn in two, from top to bottom.

39 And the officer who was standing in front of him saw how he had expired and said, "This man was indeed a son of God."

40 There were also some women looking on from a distance—among them Mary of Magdala, and Mary the mother of the lesser James

41 and Joseph, and Salome. These had followed him and served him while he was in Galilee; and several other women who had come up to Jerusalem with him were also there.

*What though my bodie runne to dust  
Faith cleaves unto it*

42 By this time evening had come. It was the day of 'preparation',  
43 that is, the day before the sabbath. So when Joseph of Arimathaea  
came, a prominent councillor who was himself expecting the  
kingdom of God, he boldly went up to Pilate and requested the  
body of Jesus.

44 Surprised that Jesus should be dead so soon, Pilate summoned  
the officer in charge and asked him if he had already died.

45 And when he had been assured by the officer, he allowed Joseph  
to take the body.

46 Having bought a linen shroud, Joseph then took the body of  
Jesus down from the cross and wrapped it in the shroud; he  
laid the body in a tomb, which had been excavated from rock,  
and rolled a stone against the entrance.

47 Mary of Magdala and Mary the mother of Joseph were watching  
where the body was laid.

*The world's too little for thy tent*

16, 1 When the sabbath was over Mary of Magdala, with Mary the  
mother of James, and Salome, bought spices with a view to  
anointing him.

2 Then, very early after dawn on the Sunday, they came to the  
tomb.

3 Both were wondering to themselves, "Who will roll away the  
stone for us from the entrance to the tomb?"

4 But when they looked up they saw that the stone had already  
been rolled away; it was very big.

So they entered the tomb and saw a young man sitting to the 5 right, clothed in a white robe. They were seized with fear and dread.

But he said to them, "Do not be alarmed. You are looking for 6 Jesus of Nazareth who was crucified? He has risen; he is not here. Look and see the place where they laid him.

But go and bring this message to his disciples and Peter: 'He is 7 going on before you to Galilee; there you will see him, as he told you.' "

So the women went out and hurried away from the tomb, over- 8 come by fear and wonder. They said nothing to anyone, for they were frightened.

*Rise heart; thy Lord is risen. Sing his praise  
Without delays*

[When he had risen, early on the first day of the week, he appeared 9 first to Mary the Magdalene, from whom he had driven out seven demons. She went and announced the news to those who 10 had been his companions, who were now mourning and weeping. But when they were told that he was alive and had been seen by 11 her, they would not believe it.

Afterwards he appeared in another form to two of them as they 12 were travelling on foot to the country; these too went off and 13 brought the news to the others, but they were not believed either.

Finally, he appeared to the eleven as they were at table, and 14 scolded them for their disbelief and prejudiced minds, since they would not put faith in those who had seen him raised from the dead.

*All knees shall bow to thee; all wits shall rise  
And praise him who did make and mend our eies*

Then he said to them, "Go out to the whole world and proclaim 15 the gospel to all creatures. All those who have faith and are 16 baptized will be saved; but whoever refuses faith will be condemned.

**MARK 16**

- 17 At every step, those who have faith will be attended by miracles
- 18 such as these. In my name they will drive out demons. They will speak new tongues. They will handle snakes. Even if they drink poison they will not suffer harm. They will lay their hands on the sick and restore them to health."
- 19 After he had spoken to them the Lord Jesus was raised to heaven and took his seat at God's right hand.
- 20 And the disciples went out and proclaimed the gospel every-where. The Lord worked with them and confirmed the word of the gospel by the miracles that followed them.]

LUKE'S  
ACCOUNT



*Approach and read*

Already several have set about drawing up a report of the events 1, 1 brought about in our midst, following the tradition handed down 2 to us by the earliest witnesses and servants of God's word. I have therefore decided, my dear Theophilus, to look carefully 3 into the details from the very beginning and to write you the story as it happened, to prove for you the soundness of the 4 teaching you have received.

*The time draws near the birth of Christ*

During the reign of Herod, king of Judaea, there lived a priest 5 called Zachary, who belonged to the priest group of Abia; his wife was of Aaron's stock and her name was Elizabeth.

**They were both good people** in the eyes of God, scrupulously 6 exact in the observance of the Lord's commandments and ordinances. But they had no child, since Elizabeth was barren 7 and the two of them were getting on in years.

Now Zachary's group was assigned to do service before God and 8 it fell to him one day to go into the temple of the Lord and offer incense according to the priestly custom. During the incensation 10 the whole congregation of the people was praying outside. And Zachary had a vision of an angel of the Lord, standing to the 11 right of the incense-altar. He was greatly troubled by what he 12 saw, and very apprehensive.

But the angel said to him, "Have no fear, Zachary, for your 13 prayer has been granted; your wife Elizabeth will give you a son, 14

LUKE I

and you shall call his name John. You will have great joy and  
15 gladness; and many others too will rejoice at his birth. For this  
boy is destined to be great before God: he will drink no wine or  
strong drink; he will be filled with the Holy Spirit from the  
16 moment of his birth; and he will bring many Israelites back to  
17 the Lord their God. With all the divine power of Elia he will go  
before God, reconciling fathers and children, restoring the  
rebellious to the way of obedience, and preparing for the Lord  
a people in readiness."

*Say yes, say yes, and doubt not  
Bright threads of light*

18 "But how can I be sure of this?" Zachary said to the angel. "I  
am an old man, and my wife is advanced in years."

19 And the angel replied, "I am Gabriel who stand at the service  
of God, and I have been sent to speak to you and to announce  
this good news.

20 So you will be dumb, and will have no power to speak until the  
day when all these things come to pass; this is your punishment  
for refusing to believe my words.  
And my words will come true in their own time."

21 Now the people were waiting outside for Zachary and wondering  
what was keeping him in the temple.

22 Then, when he came out, he could not speak to them and they  
realized he had seen a vision in the temple.  
He himself could only make signs and remained dumb.

23 In due course, when he had completed his period of service in  
the temple, he returned to his home.

24 And after some time his wife Elizabeth became pregnant, and  
25 for five months withdrew from the world. She said to herself:  
"This favour the Lord has done for me; now at last he has willed  
to end my disgrace among men."

*Grace was in all her steps*

26 When Elizabeth was in her sixth month, the angel Gabriel was

sent by God to a young girl in a town of Galilee called Nazareth. 27  
 She was engaged to a man of the house of David called Joseph;  
 and the girl's name was Mary.

The angel went in to Mary and said, "Greeting to God's favoured 28  
 one! The Lord is with you."

And Mary was troubled at his words, wondering what was 29  
 behind this greeting.

But the angel said to her, "Have no fear, Mary. God's favour 30  
 is with you. You shall become a mother and shall give birth to 31  
 a son, whose name you shall call Jesus. He will be great, and will 32  
 have the title 'Son of the Most-high'. The Lord God will give  
 him the throne of his father, David; he will be king for ever over 33  
 the house of Jacob, and his reign will never end."

*The mother of my Lord*

Mary said to the angel, "How can this be? I am a virgin." 34  
 And the angel replied, "A holy Spirit will come upon you and 35  
 the power of the Most-high will overshadow you; for this reason  
 the holy child to be born will be called 'Son of God'.

And not only that! Even your cousin Elizabeth is going to have 36  
 a son, in spite of her years. Although she was supposed to be  
 barren she is now in her sixth month; for the word of God 37  
 never fails."

Mary said, "I am the Lord's servant; let it be done as you say." 38  
 And the angel left her.

*Deliberate speed, majestic instance*

Presently, Mary got ready and set out in haste for a town in the 39  
 hill country of Judah. She entered Zachary's house and greeted 40  
 Elizabeth. And when Elizabeth heard Mary's greeting, the infant 41  
 leaped in her womb. She was filled with a holy Spirit and in 42  
 animation cried out to Mary, "Of all women you are blessed, 43  
 and blessed is the infant in your womb! Who am I, that I should 44  
 be favoured with a visit from the mother of my Lord? Indeed, 45  
 the very moment I heard your greeting, the infant in my womb  
 leaped for joy. How blessed she is who has had faith in what the  
 Lord promised her!"

*Millions this night will sing Magnificat*

**46 And Mary said:**

“My soul sings the praise of the Lord.  
 47 My heart rejoices in God my Saviour.  
 48 For he has looked to the lowliness of his servant.  
 Yes. All generations will count me blessed.  
 49 The Almighty has done great things for me;  
 holy is his name.  
 50 From age to age his mercy never ends,  
 for men who fear him.  
 51 He shows his might in the strength of his arm,  
 and smites the proud, in their arrogance.  
 52 He brings down the mighty from their seats,  
 and raises up the lowly.  
 53 He fills the hungry with good things,  
 and sends the rich empty away.  
 54 Mindful of his promised mercy,  
 he has come to the aid of Israel, his servant,  
 55 keeping his pledge to our fathers,  
 his covenant for ever to Abraham and his posterity.”

56 Mary remained with Elizabeth for about three months and then returned to her home.

*And joy is in the throbbing tide*

57 In due course the time of Elizabeth’s pregnancy came to an end  
 58 and a son was born to her. And when news got around of the  
 Lord’s great kindness to her, her neighbours and relations all  
 rejoiced with her.

59 On the eighth day they gathered for the circumcision of the child,  
 and wanted to name him after his father Zachary.  
 60 But his mother would not hear of it. “No!” she said, “he shall  
 be called John.”  
 61 So they pointed out that none of her family was called by this  
 62 name; and they made signs to the father to see what he wanted  
 to call the child.





Demanding a writing-block, Zachary wrote, "His name is John." 63  
And this set them all wondering.

Then Zachary immediately got back the use of his tongue and 64  
began to speak, praising God.

A strange fear came upon all the neighbours. Indeed the whole 65  
hill country of Judaea was soon talking about these things.  
Pondering them deep in their hearts, all the people had one 66  
question: "What is this child to become?"  
For the hand of the Lord was surely upon him.

*Perpetual benediction*

His father Zachary was filled with the holy Spirit, and prophesied 67  
in these words:

"Blessed the Lord God of Israel, 68  
who has visited his people and brought them salvation,  
who has raised up a strong saviour, in the house of David his 69  
servant.

Already he had promised it of old, 70  
speaking by the lips of his holy prophets,  
that he would save us from our enemies, 71  
from the hands of those who hate us.

Already he had shown kindness to our ancestors, 72  
fidelity to his holy covenant.

He had promised on oath to our father, Abraham, 73  
to deliver us from the hand of our enemies, 74  
to enable us to serve him without fear, 75  
and walk before him in holiness and justice,  
all the days of our lives.

And you, child, will be called a prophet of the Most-high; 76  
you will go before the Lord to prepare for his coming,  
to bring to his people assurance of salvation, 77  
through forgiveness of their sins.

By the pity and mercy of our God 78  
the morning-star will visit us from on high,  
to shine on men who sit in darkness and the shadow of death, 79  
**to lead our steps in the way of peace."**

*And all who would save their lives must find the desert—  
The lover, the poet, the girl who dreams of Christ*

8o The child grew up and became strong in spirit; **and he lived alone in the wilderness** until the day of his manifestation to Israel.

*God's most deep decree*

2, 1 At that time a decree went out from Augustus Caesar that the 2 whole empire should be registered for taxes, a census that first took place when Quirinius was governor of Syria.  
3 So all the people set out to have themselves registered, each to his own town.  
4 And Joseph, who belonged to the house and family of David, went from the town of Nazareth in Galilee to the town of David 5 in Judaea, which is called Bethlehem, to be registered there with Mary, his pledged wife, who was expecting a child.  
6 And it happened that while they were in Bethlehem the time came for Mary's child to be born.

*Adore and draw near*

7 She gave birth to a son, her 'first-born'; and she wrapped him up, and cradled him in a manger, because they could not find lodging at the inn.

*Harping in loud and solemn quire*

8 In the same district there were shepherds, spending the night in the fields and taking turn watching their flocks.  
9 And an angel of the Lord came to them, and the splendour of the Lord shone all round them; and great fear came upon them.  
10 But the angel said to them, "Have no fear. I bring you good news 11 of a great joy that is to come for all the people: Today a Saviour has been born to you in the town of David; he is the Lord Messiah.  
12 This will be a sign for you: you will find the infant all wrapped up, and cradled in a manger."





Suddenly a multitude of the heavenly army was with the angel; 13  
and they sang the praise of God:

**“Glory to God on high,**  
and on earth peace,  
among God’s chosen people.”

14

*Great things and full of wonder in our ears*

When the angels had departed to heaven, the shepherds said to 15  
one another, “Why don’t we go over to Bethlehem and see what  
has happened, according to this word revealed to us by the  
Lord?”

So they hurried there and found Mary and Joseph, and the 16  
infant cradled in the manger.

Having seen it all, they made known what the word of the Lord 17  
had revealed about this child.

And all who heard it were astonished at what the shepherds told 18  
them.

*The still, small voice*

Mary, too, took all these words to heart and pondered them to 19  
herself.

*Look down on us gently who journey by night*

Then the shepherds went back to work, praising God and thank- 20  
ing him for all they had heard and seen, as had been promised  
them.

*That which was our duty to do*

A week later, when the child was circumcised, he was given the 21  
name Jesus, which the angel had announced before his concep-  
tion.

And in due course, when the time of purification laid down by 22  
Moses was also completed, his parents brought him to  
Jerusalem to offer him to the Lord, in accordance with the law of 23  
Scripture: “Every first-born male shall be deemed consecrated

24 to the Lord"; and also to offer the sacrifice prescribed by the law, "a pair of turtle-doves or two young pigeons."

*They that wait upon the Lord*

25 At Jerusalem there was a man called Simeon, an honest, god-fearing man, who lived for the day when the fortunes of Israel would be restored. The Holy Spirit was with him, and he had been given to know by the Spirit that he would not die before he had seen the Lord's Messiah.

*Give thanks and lie down in peace*

27 So he came to the temple, under the impulse of the Spirit. And when his parents brought in the child Jesus to do for him what 28 was customary under the law, he took him in his arms and gave thanks to God in these words:  
29 "Almighty God,  
now you are letting your servant die,  
in the peace you promised.  
30 For my own eyes have seen your Saviour,  
31 prepared by you in the sight of all the peoples,  
32 as a light of revelation for the nations,  
as a glory for your people Israel."

*Death died and Birth was born with one great cry*

33 No little wonder was caused to the child's father and mother by 34 all these things. Simeon blessed them, and said to his mother Mary, "This child will decide the future of many in Israel—their rise or their downfall—so that the inmost thoughts of men may stand revealed. A sign he will be, but a sign to be rejected; 35 and you yourself will have your heart pierced by a sword."

*But the hope of the poor shall not perish for ever*

36 There was also a prophetess, Anna, a daughter of Phanuel of the 37 tribe of Asher, who was now well on in years. At the age of eighty she still remained a widow, having lived after girlhood seven

years of married life with her husband. She spent all her time in the temple, serving God day and night, fasting and praying. At this very moment she came on the scene, and gave praise to 38 God. And she used speak about the child to all who were looking for the liberation of Jerusalem.

Then, when they had carried out everything prescribed by the 39 law of the Lord, the parents returned to Galilee, to their own town of Nazareth. And the boy grew up to be strong and full of 40 wisdom; God's grace was upon him.

*This birth was hard and bitter agony for us*

His parents used go up every year to Jerusalem for the paschal 41 feast; so when he reached the age of twelve, they made the 42 pilgrimage as usual. But at the end of the festive week, when 43 they set out for home, Jesus unknown to them stayed behind in Jerusalem. Thinking all the time that he was with the other 44 pilgrims, they had travelled a whole day's journey before they began to search for him among the relatives and friends. And 45 having failed to find him, they returned to Jerusalem to look for him.

Only after three days did they discover him in the temple. There 46 he was, seated among the learned doctors, listening to them and asking them questions! And all were astounded at his intelligence 47 and his answers.

They could hardly believe their eyes when they saw him. "My 48 son," said his mother to him, "why did you do this on us? Your father and I have been so worried looking for you."

He replied, "Why were you looking for me? Were you not aware 49 of my duty to be in my Father's house?"

But they did not understand what he meant. 50

He then went home with them to Nazareth and lived in obedience 51 to them. And his mother stored up all these things in her heart.

As he grew up, Jesus was outstanding both for his wisdom and 52 for the favour he enjoyed before God and men.

*I heard a herald's note announce the coming of a king*

3, 1 It was the fifteenth year of Tiberius Caesar's reign. Pontius Pilate was the governor of Judaea, Herod the ruler of Galilee, Philip his brother the ruler of Ituraea and Trachonitis, Lysanias 2 the ruler of Abilene; and the high priests were Annas and Caiphas.

That was when God's call came to John, the son of Zachary, in the desert.

3 He went all over the Jordan region, proclaiming baptism and calling on men to begin a new life, so as to be freed from their sins.

4 For so it stood written in the book of Isaia the prophet:  
 'A voice calls in the desert:  
 Make ready the way for the Lord,  
 make straight the path for his coming.'

5 Every valley shall be filled,  
 every mountain and hill levelled down.  
 The crooked shall be made straight,  
 the rough made smooth.

6 And all mankind shall see the salvation of God.'

7 Crowds of people were flocking to John to be baptized. And he said to them, "Who has given you to think, brood of vipers, that 8 you shall escape the coming anger of God? Show by your deeds the conversion of your hearts; and do not have the presumption to think, 'We have Abraham for father.' For I tell you that God 9 can raise up children to Abraham from these stones! Already the axe is laid to the roots of the trees; any tree that does not produce the right fruit will be cut down and thrown in the fire."

*A way of life becoming to mankind*

10 The people asked him, "What then must we do?"

11 And John answered, "**Whoever has two coats, let him share with the man who has none;** whoever has food let him do the same.'

12 Even tax-collectors came to John to be baptized.  
 "What must we do, Master," they asked him.



LUKE 3

13 And he answered, "Do not exceed the assessment laid on you."  
14 The soldiers came and asked him, "What are we to do?"  
And he replied, "No bullying or oppression! And be satisfied with your pay."

*All prophecy, all medicine, is mine*

15 The people were expecting great things of John, and all were wondering whether perhaps he was the Messiah.  
16 John however spoke out openly and said, "I baptize you with water; but another is coming who is stronger than I, the thong of whose sandals I am not worthy to untie. He will baptize you  
17 with a Holy Spirit and with fire. His winnowing shovel he has ready in his hand, to cleanse out the chaff from his threshing-floor; the wheat he will gather into his barn, the chaff he will burn with unquenching fire."  
18 And many other things, too, John demanded of the people in his preaching of the gospel.

*The climbing, the endless turning*

19 Even Herod the king was taken to task by John, because of Herodias, his brother Philip's wife, and all the wicked things  
20 he did. And to top them all he now put John in prison.

*Anointed with the Spirit and with power*

21 It was at this time, when all the people were being baptized, that Jesus too was baptized.  
22 And as he was praying, heaven opened and the Holy Spirit came down upon him in bodily form, like a dove. And there was a voice from heaven: "You are my beloved Son. You have I chosen."

*Noblest scion of the human race*

23 When Jesus began his work he was about thirty years old, the son, as it was thought, of Joseph. And the line of his ancestors

went back from Joseph to Heli, Matthat, Levi, Melchi, Jannai, 24  
 Joseph, Mattathiah, Amos, Nahum, Esli, Naggai, Maath, 25  
 Mattathiah, Semein, Josech, Joda, Johanan, Rhesa, Zerubbabel, 27  
 Shealtiel, Neri, Melchi, Addi, Cosam, Elmadam, Er, Joshua, 29  
 Eliezer, Jorim, Matthat, Levi, Symeon. Juda, Joseph, Jonam, 30  
 Eliakim, Melea, Menna, Mattatha, Nathan, David, Jesse, Obed, 32  
 Boaz, Salmon, Nahshon, Amminadab, Admin, Arni, Hezron, 33  
 Perez, Juda, Jacob, Isaac, Abraham, Terah, Nahor, Serug, Ragu, 34  
 Phalek, Eber, Sala, Kainam, Arphachsad, Shem, Noah, Lamech, 36  
 Methuselah, Enoch, Jared, Mahalaleel, Kainam, Enosh, Seth, 38  
 Adam.

Finally to God.

*I have chosen thee in the furnace of affliction*

Filled with the Holy Spirit, Jesus then departed from the Jordan 4, 1  
 valley, and for forty days was led by the Spirit in the desert, 2  
 while being tempted by the devil.

During all this period he had eaten no food, and was hungry  
 when it was over. And the devil said to him, "If you are God's 3  
 Son, say the word and let this stone become bread."

But Jesus replied, "It is written in Scripture: 'Not on bread 4  
 alone shall man live.' "

*Thy word is a lamp unto my feet, and a light unto my path*

Then the devil took him up and showed him in a flash all the 5  
 kingdoms of the world. "I will give you all this," he said, "—all 6  
 this power and splendour; for it is mine to dispose of, and I can  
 give it to whom I choose. You have only to pay homage to me, 7  
 and all will be yours!"

And Jesus replied, "It is written in Scripture: 'You shall worship 8  
 the Lord your God; him alone you shall serve.' "

*He will not suffer thy foot to be moved*

Then the devil brought him to Jerusalem and set him high on 9  
 the parapet of the temple. "Are you not God's Son?" he said.

LUKE 4

10 "Well, throw yourself down! For it is written in Scripture, 'God will give his angels charge over you, to protect you.' And also, 'they will bear you in their arms, lest you strike your foot against a stone.' "

12 And Jesus replied, "God has also commanded, 'You shall not put the Lord your God to the test.' "

13 Having thus completed the temptation, the devil departed from him for the time being.

*In wisdom bidding aloud  
To world-wide brotherhood*

14 And Jesus, in fulness of power from the Spirit, returned to Galilee.

15 Reports about him spread throughout the country; he himself was teaching in their synagogues and was highly thought of by all.

16 He came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up, and went to the synagogue on the sabbath, as was his custom. When he stood up to read the Scripture he was given the book of the prophet Isaia; so he opened it and found the place where it was written:

18 'The Spirit of the Lord rests upon me, because he has anointed me.  
He has sent me to announce good news to the lowly,  
to proclaim release for the captives,  
and sight for the blind,  
**to let the broken victims go free,**  
19 and to herald the Lord's year of grace.'

*Out of key with his time*

20 Then he closed the book, gave it back to the attendant, and sat down; and all the people in the synagogue had their eyes fixed 21 on him. The theme on which he preached was this: "Today, as you are listening here, these words of Scripture have come to pass."



22 And they were all duly impressed, but they could not understand how he should have been gifted with such words. "Isn't this the son of Joseph?" they said.

23 And Jesus replied, "No doubt you will quote me the proverb, 'Physician heal yourself: the miracles we hear you have worked down in Capharnaum, do them here in your own town.'

24 But how true it is that a prophet never gets a welcome in his own town!

25 Indeed, there were many widows in Israel during the time of Elia, when the rains of heaven were stopped for three years and

26 a half and famine came to the whole country; yet to none of these was Elia sent, but to a widow of Sarepta in the land of Sidon.

27 There were many lepers in Israel in the days of Elisha the prophet; and yet not one of these was healed, but Naaman from the land of Syria."

28 And the people in the synagogue became furious at these words.

29 Rising from the meeting, they drove him from the town and brought him to the brow of the hill, where their town was built, intending to hurl him down.

30 But he passed through the crowd and departed.

*He is a presence to be felt and known*

31 He went down to the town of Capharnaum in Galilee and used

32 teach them there on the sabbath. And they were all astounded at his doctrine and the authority with which he spoke.

33 In the local synagogue there was a man with an unclean spirit,

34 who shouted at the top of his voice, "Hal! Jesus of Nazareth! What do you want from us? Have you come to destroy us? I know who you are—God's Holy One."

35 But Jesus rebuked him, "Silence! Go out from him!" And the demon, dashing the man down before all the people, went out and left him unharmed.

36 A strange fear came upon all of them.  
"What can this be at all?" they were saying to one another.  
"Here is one who commands evil spirits with authority and power, and they go out!"

And the fame of Jesus spread to every corner of the country. 37

On leaving the synagogue he went to Simon's house. Simon's 38 mother-in-law was in the grip of a high fever, so they asked him to do something for her.

Standing over her bed, he commanded the fever to leave her. 39 And so it did.

Immediately she got up and began to serve them.

At sunset all those who had sick people afflicted with various 40 diseases brought them to him; and he would stand over each one, lay his hands on them, and heal them.

Evil spirits, too, came out from many; and they used shout out 41 and say, "You are the Son of God."

But Jesus would not allow them to speak, because they knew that he was the Messiah.

*His reign of peace upon the earth began*

When morning came he went away out to a lonely place. The 42 people went looking for him and, when they came to him, wanted to hold him, and not to let him go away from them.

But he said to them, "I must preach to the other towns too the 43 gospel of the kingdom of God; this is why I have been sent." So he went about preaching the gospel in the Jewish synagogues. 44

*And we have come into our heritage*

On one occasion, when he was by the lake of Gennesareth and 5, 1 all the people were pressing round to hear him preach the word of God, he saw two boats by the lake-side; the fishermen had 2 left them and were cleaning their nets. He got into one of them— 3 it was Simon's—and asked Simon to pull out a little from the shore.

He then sat in the boat and taught the people from it.

When he had stopped speaking he said to Simon, "Push out to 4 the deep water and let out your nets for a catch."

LUKE 5

5 And Simon replied, "Master, all the night we have been working hard and have caught nothing; however, seeing it's you that say it, I will let out the nets."

6 So they did this, and made such a huge catch of fish that the nets  
7 were bursting. They hailed their workmates in the other boat to come and help them; and when these drew up, the two boats were loaded till they were almost sinking.

8 The sight of this was enough to make Peter fall on his knees before Jesus.

"Lord," he said, "go away from me! I am a sinful man."

9 A strange fear had come upon him, and upon all the others, over  
10 the catch of fish they had just made; so too James and John, the Sons of Zebedee, who were Simon's partners.

Jesus, however, said to Simon, "Have no fear. From now on your nets will capture men."

11 Then, having rowed their boats ashore, they left all things and followed him.

*Our goal which we compel : Man shall be man*

12 Jesus was in one of their towns when a man who was covered with leprosy happened to come along; the moment he saw him he fell prostrate before him and begged his help. "Sir," he said, "if only you want to, you can heal me of my disease."

13 "Yes, I do," said Jesus, as he reached out his hand and touched him. "Be healed!" And his leprosy disappeared at once.

14 Jesus, however, would not allow him to tell anyone, except to go to the priest and let him see that he was cured; having been healed of leprosy he was to bring the offering prescribed by Moses, to have the cure certified.

*And mark in every face I meet  
Marks of weakness, marks of woe*

15 In spite of this, however, news about him was actually spreading; and large crowds of people would gather to hear him and to be cured of their sicknesses.

16 And from time to time he himself used withdraw to lonely places for prayer.

*Punished by crimes of which I would be quit*

One day, as he was teaching, some Pharisees and doctors of the 17 law were sitting around, having come from Judaea and Jerusalem as well as the villages of Galilee; and he was favoured by the Lord with power to heal.

Who should arrive just then but a party of men carrying a cripple 18 on a stretcher. They were trying to bring him in and lay him down before Jesus, but they could not reach him on account of 19 the crowd; so they climbed up to the roof, made an opening in the tiles, and let the man down on the stretcher, right in front of him.

And when he saw their faith he said, "Friend, your sins are 20 forgiven."

*With tranquil restoration*

A debate then started among the doctors of the law and the 21 Pharisees. "How can he have the nerve?" they said. "This is blasphemous talk! Who but God alone can forgive sins?"

But Jesus, knowing their minds, said to them, "Why have you 22 these thoughts? Which do you think is the easier, to say, 'Your 23 sins are forgiven', or to say, 'Get up and walk'?

But I will let you see that the Son of Man has power on earth to 24 forgive sins."

So he turned to the cripple and said, "Stand up, I tell you, take your stretcher and go home."

In a twinkle the man was on his feet before them all; he took the 25 bed on which he had lain and went home, praising God. And 26 they were all utterly dumbfounded. A strange fear came upon them and they began to praise God, saying to themselves, "What we have seen today is incredible!"

*The Father's will**May we also know and may we fulfil*

Afterwards Jesus went out and saw a tax-collector, whose name 27 was Levi, sitting at the tax-office. "Follow me," he said to him. And Levi packed up, and left all behind to follow him. 28

29 He gave a great party for Jesus at his home; and among the guests were a large number of tax-collectors and their friends.  
30 So the Pharisees and their learned doctors began to complain to his disciples, "How is it that you take meals with these tax-collectors and sinners?"

*The silver answer rang, . . . 'Not Death but Love!'*

31 Jesus replied, "It is not the healthy who need a doctor but the sick. I have not come to call the pious to penance, but men who are remote from God."

*And bade the world forget it had been sad*

33 They said to him, "Why is it that the disciples of John and of the Pharisees observe fasts and times of special prayer, while yours go in for eating and drinking?"  
34 And Jesus answered, "Can you expect the bridegroom's friends to go fasting while the bridegroom is with them? But a time will come when the bridegroom will be taken from them; and when that time comes, **they will have good reason to fast.**"

*I make all things new*

36 To illustrate his point he went on to say, "Nobody cuts a piece from a new coat to patch an old one. For one thing the new coat will be torn; for another, the new patch will not suit the old material.  
37 Nor do people pour new wine into unseasoned skins, or if so, the new wine bursts the wine-skins, so that the wine is lost and the skins are destroyed. New wine is poured into new skins.  
39 And no person with a taste for the old will drink new wine; he will say, 'You can't beat the old!'"

*Glad from a world grown old and cold and weary*

6, 1 On one occasion, as he was passing through wheat-fields on a sabbath, his disciples began to pluck ears of wheat, rubbing them in their hands and eating the grains.  
2 Some of the Pharisees remarked, "Why are you doing what is not allowed on the sabbath?"



## LUKE 6

- 3 And Jesus replied, "Do you not remember the story in the Bible of what David did when he and his companions were hungry?"
- 4 How he entered the house of God and took the sacred loaves laid out there, eating them and sharing them with his companions —although only the priests are allowed to eat them."
- 5 He added, "The Son of Man is Lord of the sabbath."
- 6 On another sabbath when he had gone into a synagogue and was teaching, there was a man present whose right hand was shrivelled up. The doctors of the law and the Pharisees were watching him to see if he would heal him on the sabbath, so as to be able to bring a charge against him.
- 8 But he knew their minds and said to the man with the shrivelled hand, "Stand out here in the middle." The man did so.
- 9 And Jesus said to them, "I ask you, is it right to do good on the sabbath, or to do evil; to save life, or to destroy?"
- 10 Then, looking round on all of them, he said to the man, "Stretch out your hand."
- 11 And the moment he did so, his hand was restored. So they were furious and began discussing among themselves what they would do with Jesus.

### *They love the Good : they worship Truth*

- 12 At this time Jesus once went out to the hills to pray and passed a whole night in prayer before God. When the day broke he summoned his disciples and selected twelve from among them, whom he named Apostles.
- 13 Their names were as follows:
- 14 Simon, whom he named Peter, and his brother Andrew; also James and John, Philip and Bartholomew,
- 15 Matthew and Thomas, James, the son of Alphaeus, and Simon, who was called the 'Zealot';
- 16 then Jude, the son of James, and finally, Judas Iscariot, who turned traitor.

*For lives that slyly turn in their cramped holes*

He then went down with them to a level area; and he stood 17 there, surrounded by a large number of his disciples and a great multitude of people from all over Judaea and from Jerusalem and the coast of Tyre and Sidon, who had come to hear him and 18 to be healed of their diseases. Those who were troubled by evil spirits were cured; and all the people wanted to touch him, 19 because of this extraordinary power that came out from him and healed them all.

*Into a transcendental innocence*

And Jesus, with his eyes raised towards his disciples, said to 20 them:

“Well for you poor; for yours is the kingdom of God.  
Well for you who are now hungry; for you will be filled. 21  
Well for you who now weep; for you will laugh.  
Well for you when people hate you, and shun you, and slander 22 you, and disown your name as evil, because of the Son of Man.  
Let it be for you a day of joy and gladness, because your reward 23 in heaven will be great; for that was how their ancestors treated the prophets.

But woe to you rich; for you have had your comfort. 24  
Woe to you who are now filled; for you will go hungry. 25  
Woe to you who now laugh; for you will mourn and weep.  
Woe to you when all men speak well of you; 26  
for that was how their ancestors treated the false prophets.

*A terrible beauty is born*

I say to you who listen: 27  
Love your enemies.  
Do good to those who hate you.  
Bless those who curse you. 28  
Pray for those who show you malice.  
If a man strikes you on one cheek, turn him the other as well. 29  
If a man takes your overcoat, let him have your coat as well.

## LUKE 6

30 Give to the one who asks.  
Do not seek the return of what has been taken from you.

*The flower of the Ages  
And the first love of the world*

31 Treat others as you would like others to treat you.  
32 If you love only those who love you, what thanks can you expect?  
Even sinners return love for love.  
33 If you do good only to those who do good to you, what thanks  
can you expect? Even sinners do as much.  
34 If you lend only when you expect a return, what thanks can you  
expect? Even sinners lend to sinners, when they expect to get  
their money back.  
35 With you it must be different: Love your enemies, and do good,  
and lend to others, even when you expect no return. Your reward  
will be very great, and you will be true children of God; for God  
also is good to thankless people and evildoers.  
36 Be merciful, as your Father is merciful.  
  
37 Do not judge others, and you will not be judged.  
Do not condemn, and you will not be condemned.  
Forgive others, and you will be forgiven.  
38 Give to others, and God will give to you.  
A good measure, well-shaken, well-packed and flowing over,  
God will give to you; **for the measure of your giving will be the  
measure of God's giving to you.”**

*My heart in unison with all mankind*

39 He also gave them a proverb: “Can a blind man be guided by  
another blind man? Will not both fall into the ditch?  
40 A disciple is not above his master, but if he is properly trained he  
will be like his master.  
41 How can you see the speck in your friend’s eye, if you cannot  
42 see the splinter in your own? How can you say to your friend,  
‘Friend, let me take that speck out of your eye’, if you do not  
see the splinter in your own? Do not deceive yourself! First take  
the splinter out of your own eye; then you will be in a position  
to take the speck out of your friend’s eye.



*Christen me, therefore, that my acts in the dark may be just*

43 A good tree does not yield bad fruit, nor does a bad tree yield  
44 good fruit; every tree is known by its fruit.  
Figs are not gathered off brambles, nor grapes off briars.  
45 A good man yields what is good from the good that is stored in  
his heart; an evil man yields what is evil from the evil that is  
stored in his heart. Whatever is stored in the heart, that is what  
the mouth speaks.

*Nothing half-hearted or ambiguous  
But the perfected diamond of my will*

46 What is the point of appealing to me, 'Lord! Lord!' if you will  
not do what I tell you?  
47 The one who comes to me, and listens to my words, and acts  
48 on them—what is he like? Let me tell you: he is like a man who  
builds a house, and digs deep, and sets the foundation on solid  
rock; when the waters run high, and the floods come beating  
against that house, they cannot shake it, because it is solidly  
built.  
49 But the one who hears my words, and does not act on them, is  
like a man who builds a house on earth, without a foundation;  
when the floods come beating against it, it tumbles down.  
And great is the crash of that house."

*Lord, let this man live*

7, 1 Having completed his discourse to the people, Jesus moved on  
2 to Capharnaum. And a certain officer had a servant who was  
very dear to him, who had now fallen ill and was at death's door.  
3 The officer had heard about Jesus, so he sent him a delegation  
of senior Jewish citizens, to ask him to come and save his  
servant.  
4 When they came to Jesus, these people presented their plea with  
5 urgency: "This man deserves a good turn from you; he is a  
friend of our people and has actually built our synagogue."  
6 So Jesus accompanied them.  
He had almost reached the house when the officer sent out some

of his friends to say to him, "Sir, don't trouble yourself. I'm not good enough to receive you in my house—which is why I didn't 7 think fit to approach you myself. Just say the word, and my servant will be healed. I'm a man under authority, and I have 8 soldiers in my charge. If I tell one to go, he goes; if I tell one to come, he comes; and if I tell my servant to do something, he does it."

Hearing all this, Jesus was astounded at the man; he turned to the 9 people who were following him and said, "Not even in Israel, I tell you, have I found faith like this."

And when the delegates returned to the house, they found the 10 servant fit and well again.

*O stricken mother's soul!*

Subsequently he came to a town called Nain, accompanied by 11 his disciples and a large crowd.

As he approached the town-gate it so happened that a dead man 12 was being brought to the grave, the only son of a widowed mother. A large body of people from the town were in the procession with her.

Seeing her, the Lord was moved to pity for her and said, "Do 13 not weep!"

And as he walked over to the coffin and laid his hand on it, the 14 bearers halted. "Young man," he said, "I command you to rise." And the dead man sat up and began to talk; Jesus gave him back 15 to his mother.

A strange fear came upon them all and they gave praise to God: 16 "A great prophet has come among us," they said. "God has looked with kindness to his people."

And this latest report about him spread to the whole of Judaea 17 and all the surrounding country.

*The clue of reality*

News of these things was also brought to John by his own dis- 18 ciples. So he summoned two of them and sent them to the Lord 19 to ask, "Are you really the one who is to come, or must we wait for another?"

20 When they came to Jesus the men said, "John the Baptist has sent us to ask, 'Are you the one who is to come, or must we wait for another?'"

*The glimpses of his Father's glory shine*

21 At that time he had just cured many people of diseases and plagues and evil spirits, and had restored sight to many who were blind.

22 So this is how he answered John's disciples: "Go back and tell John what you have seen and heard: how the blind see, and the lame walk, and the lepers are healed, and the deaf hear, and the dead are raised, and the gospel is being preached to humble folk.

23 And well for the man who does not go wrong because of me!"

*—What did you see?*

*—I saw myself and God*

24 When the messengers had left, Jesus began to speak to the people about John: "That time you went out to the desert, what were you looking for? **A reed shaken by the wind? Was that it?**

25 Or what did you go out to see? Perhaps a man dressed in soft garments?  
But the people who live and dress in luxury, you find them in the palaces of kings.

26 So what did you go out to see? A prophet?

27 Yes, I tell you, and more than a prophet. John is the one of whom Scripture says:  
'I am sending my messenger ahead of you,  
to prepare the road before you.'

28 Among all who have ever been born, I tell you, there is none greater than John.  
And yet the least person in God's kingdom is greater than he."

29 All the people who listened to him, tax-collectors included, had acknowledged the will of God by receiving John's baptism.

30 But the Pharisees and the teachers of the law rejected God's will in their regard, and would not have themselves baptized by him.





*All instincts immature*

*All purposes unsure*

Jesus said, "How can I describe the people of this generation? 31  
What are they like?

They are like the children you find sitting in the streets, who 32  
call to one another:

'We played you pipes, and you would not dance.

We keened the dead, and you would not mourn.'

John the Baptist came, eating no bread and drinking no wine; 33  
and you say, 'He is mad!'

The Son of Man came, an eater and a drinker; and you say, 34  
'Here's a glutton, a drinker of wine, a friend of tax-collectors and  
their ilk!'

So wisdom has been proved right by all her children." 35

*You know what I was,*

*You see what I am: change me, change me!*

One of the Pharisees invited Jesus to dinner; he went to the 36  
Pharisee's house and sat down to table.

And a woman of the town who led a sinful life got to know that 37  
Jesus was dining with the Pharisee. So she brought an alabaster  
flask of expensive perfume, and finding a place behind at his feet 38  
she began to weep; **she wet his feet with her tears**, wiped them  
dry with her hair, kissed his feet, and anointed them with the  
perfume.

Now the Pharisee who had invited Jesus was looking on and said 39  
himself, "Surely if this man were a prophet he should have  
known all about this woman who is touching him here, the kind  
she is and the life she leads!"

And Jesus said to him, "Simon, I would like to say something 40  
to you."

"Certainly, Master!" replied Simon.

*Love, it is certain, continues till we fail*

And Jesus said, "A money-lender once had two debtors, one of 41  
whom owed him fifty thousand, and the other five thousand.

42 But since neither could pay, he wrote off the debts of both. Now which of the two will like him the more?"

43 Simon replied, "Presumably the one whom he let off with the greater debt."

And Jesus said, "You are right."

*Enough religion to hate but not enough to love*

44 Turning then towards the woman he said to Simon, "You see this woman? When I came to your house you gave me no water for my feet; but she has wet them with her tears and dried them with her hair. You gave me no kiss of welcome; but since I 45 came in here she has not ceased to kiss my feet. You did not anoint my head with oil; but she has even anointed my feet with expensive perfume.

*That what has been may never be again*

47 And therefore, I tell you, her many sins are forgiven her because she has loved much.  
If one is forgiven but little, one loves but little."

48 And he said to the woman, "Your sins are forgiven."

49 The other guests at the table began to ask one another, "Who is this man who even forgives sins?"

50 But he said to her, "Your faith has saved you. Go in peace."

*Lifting up, friend, upon you  
The light of His countenance*

8, 1 After this there followed a period when Jesus went from town to town and village to village proclaiming the joyful news of 2 God's kingdom. With him were the Twelve, and also some women who had been healed from evil spirits and other diseases: Mary, who was called the Magdalene, from whom seven demons 3 had been driven out, Johanna, the wife of an official of Herod called Chusa, and Susanna and many others. These women assisted them from their private means.

*O Christ who drives the furrow straight*

When a large crowd had assembled and people were flocking to 4  
him from the towns, Jesus told them this parable:

“A sower went out to scatter his seed. As he scattered it some 5  
fell on the path, and it was trampled on and eaten by the birds  
of the sky.

Some seed fell on stony ground; and no sooner had it sprouted 6  
than it withered, because it had no moisture.

Some fell among briars; but the briars grew up and choked it. 7  
The rest of the seed fell on good soil; it grew up and produced 8  
a rich harvest.”

And Jesus said, “Whoever has ears to hear with, let him listen.”

When his disciples asked him what the parable was about, Jesus 9  
replied, “To you God has given the grace to know the secrets 10  
of his kingdom; but for the others everything is in parables, so  
that they may see, yet not perceive, and hear, yet not understand.

This is what the parable means:

The seed represents the word of God. 11  
The seed that falls on the path stands for those who hear the 12  
word, but the devil then comes and takes the word from their  
hearts to prevent them from having faith and being saved.

The seed on the stony ground stands for those who, when they 13  
hear the word, receive it with joy; but they have no roots. For  
a while they have faith; then when trial comes they fall away.

The seed that falls in the briars stands for those who, when they 14  
have heard the word, go off and allow themselves to be stifled  
by the anxieties, the riches, and the pleasures of life; they never  
reach maturity.

Finally, the seed that falls on the good soil stands for those who 15  
hear the word and let it take root in a noble and good heart; after  
patient trial they yield a rich harvest.

*That I may walk before God, in the light of life*

No one lights a lamp and puts it away under a vessel or a bed; 16  
he puts it on a stand, so that all who enter may see the light.

There is nothing hidden that will not be revealed; nothing 17  
covered up that will not be disclosed and come to light.

## LUKE 8

18 Be careful, therefore, how you listen.

So long as a man has something to start with, he will be given more; if he has nothing, even what he thinks he has will be taken from him."

*To the place where God was homeless  
And all men are at home*

19 His mother and brothers came to visit him, but could not reach  
20 him because of the crowd. So a message was brought to him:  
"Your mother and your brothers are waiting outside to see you."  
21 And he replied, "My mother and my brothers—who are they?  
They are those who hear my word and obey it."

*Winds of the world give answer*

22 One day, having got into a boat with his disciples, he said to them,  
"Let us cross over to the other shore."  
23 So they rowed away, and as they were sailing Jesus slept. Then  
a storm of wind came down on the lake and they were in danger,  
24 because the boat was filling. They came rushing to waken him:  
"Master, Master, we're going down!"  
And Jesus, awakened, commanded the wind and the raging  
waters; and all of a sudden they stopped, and a great calm came  
down.  
25 He said to them, "Where is your faith?"  
And they, in fear and wonder, asked themselves, "What kind  
of man is this, that he has power to command the winds and the  
waves and they obey him?"

*Some wander the world and never find a home*

26 They rowed over to the country of the Gerasenes, which lies  
opposite Galilee.  
27 And as Jesus was landing from the boat, he was met by a man  
from the town who was possessed by demons, who for a long  
time had worn no clothes and lived in the tombs of the dead  
rather than in a house.  
28 As soon as he saw Jesus he fell down before him with a cry, and

shouted in a loud voice, "What do you want from me, Jesus, Son of the Most-high God? Do not torment me!"

This was because Jesus was ordering the evil spirit to go out 29 from the man. The spirit had had him in its clutches for many years; although he used be bound hand and foot, to keep him in check, he would break the fetters and be driven away out to lonely places.

"What is your name?" Jesus asked him.

30

And he replied, "My name is Army."

For there were many demons in possession of him; and they 31 begged Jesus not to command their return to hell.

A large herd of pigs was feeding there on the hill-side; so they 32 asked him to be allowed to enter the pigs. And Jesus allowed it.

They came out from the man and took possession of the pigs; 33 and the whole herd rushed down the hill into the lake, and were drowned.

*Too much reality can be a dazzle, a surfeit*

Having seen all this, the herdsmen ran off to tell the news in the 34 town and the villages. And the people came out to see for them- 35 selves. They came to Jesus and found the man who had been freed of the demons sitting at his feet, now clothed, and in his right mind. Great fear came upon them. And those who had 36 seen what happened told them how the man had been saved from the demons.

All the people of the Gerasene country then asked him to go 37 away; for they were in the grip of a terrible fear.

So he got into the boat and turned for home. And the man from 38 whom the demons had gone out wanted to stay with him. But Jesus sent him away. "Go back home," he said, "and tell them 39 all that God has done for you."

And the man went off, spreading news of what Jesus had done for him all over the town.

*An eagerness to understand more about sad men*

On his return to the other side Jesus was welcomed by the 40 people; for they had all been waiting for him.

And who should come but a man called Jairus, who was actually 41

## LUKE 8

a ruler of the synagogue. Falling at his feet, he begged Jesus to come to his house; **for he had an only daughter, twelve years old,**

42 and she was dying. So Jesus set out, with a large crowd pressing round him as he went along.

43 Among them was a woman who for twelve years had been suffering haemorrhages and had failed to get anyone to cure her. She stole up from behind and touched the fringe of his cloak; and immediately her bleeding stopped.

45 Jesus asked, "Who touched me?"  
But no one around would admit to having touched him, so Peter said, "Look, Master, there are crowds of people pressing round and pushing you!"

46 But Jesus said, "I know that someone has touched me; I felt a force go out from me."

47 The woman, therefore, seeing that she had not got away unnoticed, came up and fell trembling at his feet; and she told him before all the crowd why she had touched him and how she had suddenly been healed.

48 And Jesus said to her, "Daughter, your faith has saved you. Go in peace."

49 No sooner had he said it than someone came to announce to the synagogue-ruler, "Your daughter is dead. No need to trouble the Master any further."

50 But Jesus, hearing it, turned to him and said, "Have no fear. Just have faith, and she will be saved."

51 On arriving at the house he would not allow anyone to go in with him, except Peter, John, and James, and the child's father and

52 mother. And all the people were weeping and mourning for the girl.

53 "Stop weeping," he said to them. "The child is not dead, but asleep."

And they only laughed at him, for they knew she had died.

54 Jesus however took hold of the girl's hand and called to her, "Wake up, child!"

55 Immediately life came back to her and she got up. And he told

56 them to give her something to eat. Her parents were utterly astounded; but he forbade them to tell anyone what had happened.



*The perfected Work which is not ours*

- 9, 1 He summoned the Twelve to him and gave them special power and authority to drive out demons and to heal the sick.
- 2 Then he sent them out to proclaim God's kingdom and to heal.
- 3 "Take nothing for the journey," he said to them. "No staff, no bag, no food, no money—nor even a second coat. Once you take up residence in a house, remain in it until you move on from there. But if the people do not give you a welcome, go out from that town and shake the dust from your feet, for evidence against them in judgement."
- 6 So they set out; they went through all the villages proclaiming the news of the gospel, and healing people everywhere.

*Rulers who neither see, nor feel, nor know*

- 7 Now Herod, the ruler of the country, came to hear of all this, but did not know what to make of it; some people told him that
- 8 John had risen from the dead, others that Elia had appeared, others again that one of the ancient prophets had risen.
- 9 Herod said, "John I beheaded myself, but who is this man about whom I hear all these things?"  
He was therefore anxious to meet him.

*And the rich and the poor are no longer separate nations,—  
They are brothers in night*

- 10 On their return, the Apostles gave Jesus an account of what they had done. So he took them away privately and withdrew to a town called Bethsaida.
- 11 But the people got to know of it and went after him; and Jesus, giving them a welcome, spoke to them about the kingdom of God. If any needed healing, he healed them.
- 12 Meanwhile, it was getting late. The Twelve said to him, "Send the people away! Let them go to the neighbouring villages and farms to get lodging and food. We're out in a desert here."
- 13 "Let you give them food," Jesus said.  
"But we have only five loaves and two fish," they replied, "unless

you want us to go and buy provisions for all these people.”  
(The men alone numbered about five thousand.)

He said to the disciples, “Get them all sitting down in groups 14 of about fifty.”

This they did, and got everyone sitting down. 15

Then, taking the five loaves and the two fish and raising his eyes 16 to heaven, he blessed them, and broke them, and passed them to the disciples to distribute to the people.

All ate a full meal. And afterwards they gathered up the fragments, twelve basketfuls. 17

*Freely let me take of Thee  
Spring Thou up within my heart*

On one occasion the disciples were with him as he was praying 18 privately; and he asked them, “Who do people say that I am?”  
They replied, “Some say John the Baptist, others Elia, and others 19 again that one of the ancient prophets has risen.”

“But who do you say that I am,” he asked. 20

And Peter replied, “God’s anointed Messiah.”

He warned them strictly not to tell this to anyone, saying to 21 them, “The Son of Man must go through great suffering and be rejected by the elders of the people, the chief priests and the doctors of the law; he will be put to death; and on the third day he will rise again.”

*In order to arrive at what you are not  
You must go through the way in which you are not*

He said to all his followers, “Any man who wants to be a disciple 23 of mine must renounce himself, take up his cross each day, and come with me. The man who would save his own self shall lose it; 24 the man who is willing for my sake to lose his own self, shall save it.

For even if one gains the whole world, what is the advantage, if 25 it’s at the cost of losing one’s true self?

Indeed, if anyone is ashamed of me and of my words, the Son 26 of Man will also be ashamed of him, when he comes in his glory

LUKE 9

27 and that of his Father and the holy angels. And I tell you, there are some standing here who will not have died before they see the kingdom of God."

*I saw through all the fleshly dress  
Bright shades of everlastingness*

28 About eight days after he had spoken these words, Jesus took Peter, John, and James with him and went up into the hills to pray.  
29 As he was praying the appearance of his face was changed and  
30 his garments shone with a brilliant whiteness. All of a sudden  
31 they saw two men in conversation with him: Moses and Elia appearing in glory and talking about his forthcoming departure and all he was to fulfil in Jerusalem.  
32 Peter and his companions were then overcome by sleep; and when they awoke they still saw his glory, and the two men  
33 standing beside him. And as these began to draw away from him Peter said to Jesus—without really knowing what he was saying, “Master, **we find it so good to be here!** Let us make three tents, one for you, one for Moses, and one for Elia.”  
34 The words were still on his lips when a cloud came and overshadowed them; and as they entered the cloud they feared greatly.  
35 And a voice spoke from it: “This is my Son, my chosen one. Listen to him.”  
36 As soon as the voice stopped they found Jesus alone with them again. The disciples kept it secret and told no one at the time of what they had seen.

*Without me you can do nothing*

37 The following day, when they had come down from the mountain, they were met by a large crowd. And a man in the crowd called out to him, “Please, Master, look to my son—the only  
39 one I have. Whenever the spirit seizes him it suddenly shouts out and throws him into a foaming fit; and it won’t leave him,  
40 except after a long, wearying struggle. I asked your disciples to drive it out, but they could not.”



UNIVERSITY  
SCHOOL OF  
POLITICAL SCIENCE



And Jesus said, "O generation of unbelieving and misguided 41 people, how long shall I be with you? How long shall I bear with you? Bring your son to me."

And as the boy was coming up the demon threw him down, 42 bringing on a fit. But Jesus rebuked the spirit, and the boy was healed; he gave him back to his father.

And the people were all speechless at the extraordinary power 43 of God.

*In the blood-red dawn, where two worlds strive*

At this time, when all were wondering over his many deeds, Jesus said to his own disciples, "Listen carefully, and take my 44 words to heart: The Son of Man will be surrendered to men."

But they did not see the significance of what he said; it was all 45 so obscure to them that they failed to grasp it, and they were afraid to ask him about it.

*Give me, made lowly wise,  
The spirit of self-sacrifice*

An argument arose among them as to **which of them ranked the 46 highest.**

And Jesus, knowing what was in their minds, took a little child, 47 placed him beside him, and said to them, "Anyone who receives 48 this child in my name, receives me; and whoever receives me, receives him who sent me.

Whoever is the least of all among you is the one who is great."

*Say yes instead of no*

John said to him, "Master, we saw someone driving out demons 49 in your name and we stopped him, because he was not one of ours."

But Jesus replied, "You should not stop him. Anyone who is 50 not against you is on your side."

As the time approached when God was to take him, he set his 51 mind with determination on the journey to Jerusalem and sent

52 messengers ahead of him. As they went their way they entered  
 53 a village of the Samaritans to prepare lodging for him, but the  
 people here refused to receive him, in view of the fact that he  
 was heading for Jerusalem.

54 The disciples James and John, when they saw this, said to him,  
 "Lord, do you want us to call down fire from heaven to consume  
 them?"

55 But Jesus gave them a sharp telling-off; and they moved on to  
 another village.

*In order to possess what you do not possess  
 You must go by the way of dispossession*

57 As they were travelling the road someone said to him, "I will  
 follow you wherever you go."

58 And Jesus replied, "The foxes have dens and the birds of the  
 sky have nests, but the Son of Man has nowhere to rest his head."

59 Another he invited to become his disciple; but the man replied,  
 "Allow me first to go home and bury my father."

60 And Jesus said, "Let the dead bury their dead. Go you, and  
 preach the kingdom of God."

61 Another said to him, "I will join you, Lord, but first allow me to  
 say good-bye to my family."

62 And Jesus replied, "No man who puts his hand to the plough  
 and looks behind is of the right mettle for the kingdom of God."

*By winning words to conquer willing hearts*

10, 1 Afterwards the Lord appointed seventy-two others and sent  
 them ahead in pairs to every town he was going to visit.

2 "The harvest to be reaped is vast," he said to them, "but the  
 workers are scarce. Pray the Lord of the harvest to send workers  
 to reap his crop."

3 Go then. I am sending you as sheep among wolves. Take no  
 5 purse, no bag, no shoes, and salute no one on the road. On  
 entering a house let your first words be, 'Peace to this house!'

If the man there is a peaceful man, your peace will rest upon 6  
him; but if not, it will return to you.

Remain in the same house, eating and drinking what they give 7  
you; for a working man deserves his pay. Do not move from  
house to house.

When you come to a town and are welcomed, take the food that is 8  
offered you and heal the sick whom you find there. Say to its 9  
people, 'The kingdom of God is upon you.'

*Till truth were freed, and equity restored*

But if you come to a town and you are not welcomed, pass 10  
through its streets and say to its people, 'The very dust of your 11  
town that begrimes our feet, we shake it off against you. But  
this you must know: the kingdom of God has drawn near.'

I tell you, the people of Sodom will get off more lightly on the 12  
day of judgement than the people of that city.

Woe to you Chorazin! Woe to you Bethsaida! If the miracles 13  
worked among you had been worked in Tyre and Sidon, these  
cities would have long ago mourned for their sins and been  
converted.

But Tyre and Sidon will get off more lightly in judgement than 14  
you.

And you, Capharnaum, will you be exalted to heaven? You shall 15  
be brought down to hell!

Anyone who hears you, hears me; anyone who rejects you, 16  
rejects me; and whoever rejects me, rejects him who sent me."

*Blessed by that Wholly Other Life*

The seventy-two disciples returned full of enthusiasm and said 17  
to him, "Lord, even the demons submit to us in your name." 18  
He replied, "I have seen Satan fall like a lightning-flash from 19  
the sky. Yes, I have given you power to trample every evil under  
foot, to counter all the might of the enemy; nothing whatever  
shall harm you.

But if you have reason to rejoice, it's not that the demons submit 20  
to you but that your names are written in heaven."

*So near is God to man*

21 At that moment Jesus thrilled with joy in the fulness of the Holy Spirit and said, "I thank you, Father, Lord of heaven and earth. You have hidden these things from the wise and the learned, and

22 have revealed them to little ones. Yes, Father, such has been your pleasure. All things have been committed to me by my Father. Who the Son is, no one knows but the Father; who the Father is, no one knows but the Son, and those to whom the Son chooses to reveal him."

23 Turning to his disciples he said to them personally, "Happy the eyes that see what you see! I tell you, many prophets and kings have wished to see what you see, but have not seen it, and to hear what you hear, but have not heard it."

*To love or not; in this we stand or fall*

25 A doctor of the law once stood up and asked him a leading question: "Master, what must I do to obtain eternal life?"

26 And Jesus said, "What is written in the law? Can you quote it?"

27 He replied, "You shall love the Lord, your God, with all your heart, and all your soul, and all your strength, and all your mind; and you shall love your neighbour as you love yourself."

28 "Your answer is correct," Jesus said to him. "Keep this rule and you will have life."

29 But the other, not to be outdone, said to him, "**Who is my neighbour?**"

*Any man's death diminishes me, because I am involved in mankind*

30 Taking up his question Jesus told the following story: "There was this man who was travelling from Jerusalem down to Jericho and had the bad luck to come upon robbers. They stripped him naked, gave him a cruel beating, and went off leaving him half dead.

31 Now a priest happened to be travelling down that way; and he saw the man, but passed by on the other side.

32 And a temple servant came by, who also gave a look and passed by on the other side.



33 But a Samaritan was travelling down that road, and came upon  
 34 him; and the moment he saw him, his heart went out to him.  
 He went over to him, treated his wounds with oil and wine, and  
 bandaged them up; he mounted him on his own animal, brought  
 35 him to an inn, and looked after him. And the next day he pulled  
 out some money and gave it to the inn-keeper. 'Take care of him,'  
 he said. 'If you have any extra expenses I will pay you on my  
 return.'

36 Now which of those three do you think showed himself a neigh-  
 bour to the man who was attacked by the robbers?"

37 And the other answered, "The one who had pity on him."  
 "Go then," said Jesus to him, "and follow the same example."

*Elected silence, sing to me*

38 When he came to a certain village in the course of their journey  
 39 a woman called Martha received him in her home. She had a  
 sister called Mary; and Mary sat at the Lord's feet listening to  
 40 his words, whereas Martha had her hands full with all the work  
 of the house. Eventually she came to him and said, "Lord, how  
 can you sit there and let my sister leave me to get the supper on  
 my own? Tell her give me a hand!"

41 And the Lord replied to her, "Martha, Martha, you are worried  
 42 and fussed about so many things. And there is so little required  
 —in fact one thing only. Mary has chosen the best part; it shall  
 not be taken from her."

*Nearer to the fount of life*

11, 1 On one occasion Jesus was praying at a certain place. When he  
 had finished, one of his disciples said to him, "Lord, teach us to  
 pray; for John also taught his disciples how to pray."

2 And he said to them, "When you pray, let it be like this:  
 Father,  
 May your holy name be known,  
 and your kingdom come.

3 Give us each day the bread that we need,  
 4 and forgive us our sins,  
 for we too forgive everyone who has wronged us;  
 and keep us safe from trial."

*Begin betimes, and teach your little son  
To serve and fear God also*

He said to them, "Suppose one of you has a friend, and you go to him in the middle of the night and say, 'Friend, lend me three loaves. A friend of mine is breaking his journey with me and I have nothing to offer him.'"

Suppose this man shouts out to you, 'Don't be bothering me! I've the door locked and the children here with me in bed. I just can't get up and give you bread!'

Now even if he will not get up and give you what you need, on the ground that you are a friend, let me tell you this: if you beg shamelessly, then he will get up and look after your request.

*To the depth of our desire*

So too, I say to you,  
Ask and you will receive,  
seek and you will find,  
knock and the door will be opened to you.

Everyone who asks receives; everyone who seeks finds; everyone who knocks has the door opened to him.

If a son asks for a fish, will any father among you give him a serpent?

If he asks for an egg, will you give him poison?

*Or come we of an Automaton  
Unconscious of our pains?*

You people are by no means saints, but you know how to give good things to your children. How much more will the Father in heaven give a holy Spirit to those who ask him?"

*Cease denying, begin knowing*

One day he was driving out a spirit from a dumb man. And when the spirit had gone out, the man was able to speak, and the people were astonished.

Some of them however said, "His power is from Beelzebul, the chief of demons. That's how he drives out demons."

16 Others wanted him to procure a sign from heaven, as a proof.  
17 But Jesus, knowing their minds, said to them, "If a kingdom is divided, it loses its power; and if a house is divided, it falls to pieces. What then if Satan has become divided? Can his kingdom survive?  
18 19 Now you say that I get my power over demons from the ruler of demons; but if that is where I get mine from, from whom do your people get theirs?  
Therefore they shall be your judges.  
20 On the other hand, if I drive out demons by the finger of God, it is a sign that God's kingdom has come upon you.  
21 So long as a strong man is armed and keeps guard on his house, his property will be secure. But if a stronger one attacks and overcomes him, he takes away the arms on which he relied, and can then divide the spoils.  
22 23 The man who is not with me is against me; the man who does not gather with me scatters.

*Winning the war and losing the peace*

24 When an unclean spirit goes out from a person, it scours the waterless desert looking for a place of rest. When it does not find it, it says, 'I will go back to the house I left.' So it goes back and finds the house all swept and tidied up. Then it sets out again, and picks up seven other spirits worse than itself; and they enter the house and take possession of it.  
At the end, therefore, that man's plight is worse than it was at the start."

*Happy he with such a mother*

27 While he was saying these things, a woman in the crowd raised her voice and exclaimed, "Blessed the mother who bore you in her womb, and fed you at her breast!"  
28 And he replied, "**Blessed, rather, those who hear God's word and keep it!**"





*Precious the penitential tear  
And precious is the sigh sincere*

As the crowds were thronging to him, Jesus said, "The present 29 age is evil. It wants a sign, and no sign will be given it, except the sign of Jona. As Jona was a sign for the people of Nineveh, so 30 too the Son of Man will be a sign for the men of the present age.

The queen of the South will rise in judgement with the people 31 of the present age and will condemn them; for she came from the ends of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon.

And look! Here stands a greater than Solomon.

The men of Nineveh will rise in judgement with the people of 32 the present age and will condemn them; for they repented at the call of Jona.

And look! Here stands a greater than Jona.

*Light shines out of darkness*

Nobody lights a lamp and hides it in a cellar, or under a vessel; 33 it is set on a stand so that all who enter may enjoy its light.

*If once we lose this light*

The lamp of your body is the eye. If your eye is unclouded, your 34 whole body is lighted; but if your eye is evil then your body is dark.

Watch therefore **lest the light within you be covered in darkness.** 35 When your body is bright all over, and has no dark shadows in 36 it, it will be altogether bright, as if the beam of a lamp were shining on you."

*No inner vileness that we dread?*

When he had finished speaking he was asked to dinner by a 37 Pharisee; Jesus therefore went to his house and took a place at table. And the Pharisee was shocked to see that he did not wash 38 himself before the meal.

So the Lord said to him, "Now you Pharisees make clean the 39

outside of cup and dish, while your own hearts are filled with greed and wickedness. How senseless! Did not the same Creator who made the outside also make the inside? Give instead to the poor the contents of cup and dish, and then all is clean for you.

40 But woe to you, Pharisees! You pay tithes of every garden herb and vegetable, while you disregard justice and the love of God. These it was your duty to observe, while not omitting the rest.

41 Woe to you, Pharisees! You like to have the top seats in the synagogue, and special honours in the streets.

42 Woe to you! You are like graves with weathered slabs; people walk on them without knowing it."

*There are men whose minds the Dead have ravished*

43 One of the doctors of the law said to him in reply, "Master, by these words you are also insulting us."

44 And Jesus said to him, "Woe to you as well—you doctors of the law! You load men down with unbearable loads, and will not touch them yourselves with a finger.

45 Woe to you! You build the monuments of the prophets—when

46 it was your own fathers who murdered them. You attest your approval of their deeds; they killed them, and you build the monuments!

47 That is why the Wisdom of God has said, 'I will send them prophets and apostles and some of these they will persecute and

48 kill.' Therefore the present age will answer for the blood of all

49 the prophets shed since the beginning of the world; from the blood of Abel to the blood of Zachary, who was killed between the altar and the temple—yes, I tell you, the present age will answer for it all!

50 Woe to you, doctors of the law! For you have taken away the key of knowledge. You yourselves did not go in; and the people who were on the way in you stopped."

51 Jesus then went away. And the teachers of the law and the Pharisees became extremely hostile, hanging on every word he said, and laying traps in the hope of snaring him through his own words.

*To grow straight in the strength of thy spirit, and live out thy life  
as the light*

Meanwhile, when so many thousands of people had come 12, 1 together that they were walking on one another, Jesus first began to warn his own disciples: "Be on your guard against the influence of the Pharisees—I mean hypocrisy. For nothing is 2 covered up that will not come to light; nothing is hidden that will not be disclosed. Whatever you have whispered in the dark 3 will be heard in the light of day; whatever you have spoken in secret will be proclaimed from the house-tops.

*The place where, in the end,  
We shall find our happiness, or not at all*

To you my friends I say: have no fear of those who may kill the 4 body, but afterwards can do no more. Let me tell you whom to 5 fear. Fear the One who, after the killing, has power to hurl into hell. Yes, I tell you, he is the One to fear!

Are not five sparrows sold for a couple of pence? And yet, not 6 one of them is forgotten before God. Not only that—even the 7 hairs of your head are all numbered. Have no fear therefore. God lays more store on you than on all the birds.

*The everlasting yea—or nay*

I tell you this: if anyone declares for me before men, the Son 8 of Man will also declare for him before the angels of God; if 9 anyone disowns me before men, he will be disowned before the angels of God.

*Tell me what you mean by a sense of sin*

Whoever speaks a word against the Son of Man, can still be 10 forgiven; but whoever slanders the Holy Spirit, will never be forgiven.

*Set a watch O Lord before my mouth, keep the door of my lips*

Whenever you are brought before court-assemblies and state- 11 authorities, do not worry about what you are to say in your

12 defence. When the actual moment comes, the Holy Spirit will tell you whatever needs to be said."

*A chronicle of wasted time*

13 Someone from the crowd said to him, "Master, please make my brother share the inheritance with me."

14 And Jesus replied, "Friend, who has appointed me to be judge or arbitrator over you?"

15 Then he said to them, "Be on your guard against avarice in any form. **A man's life does not depend on his possessions**, not even when he is rich."

16 And he told them the following story:  
 'There was once a rich man whose lands produced heavy crops.  
 17 'What am I to do,' he asked himself, 'since I've nowhere to store  
 18 my crops?' Then he decided, 'I know what I'll do! I'll pull  
 down my barns and build bigger ones, where I can store away  
 19 my wheat and all my goods. And then I'll be able to sit back and  
 say to myself: Listen, man, you've put away enough good things  
 to last for many years! Take things easy. Eat, drink, and have a  
 good time.'

20 God, however, said to him, 'You fool! This very night your life  
 will be taken from you. All that you have stored away here—who  
 is it for?'

21 That is the way with the man who gathers riches for himself,  
 and is not rich towards God."

*Wherefore tonight so full of care?*

22 "I tell you therefore," he said to the disciples, "do not worry over the needs of life or of body—what to eat, or where to find  
 23 clothing; for life counts more than nourishment, and the body  
 more than clothing.

24 Learn from the crows: they neither sow nor reap, they have  
 neither stores nor barns, but still God looks after them.  
 And you, are you not much more important than the birds?

25 Can any of you by worrying add to the span of his life? And if  
 even that much is not in your power, why are you anxious about  
 the rest?





Look at the lilies: they neither spin nor make themselves clothes. 27  
And yet, I tell you, not even Solomon in all his splendour was  
dressed like one of them.

If that is how God clothes the grass of the field, which blooms 28  
today and tomorrow is thrown in the fire, how much more will  
he look after you, for all your want of faith! So you too should 29  
not be anxious about what you are to eat or drink. Do not  
worry about them. People of the world go running after these 30  
things, but you have a Father who knows that you need them.  
Let your care be for God's kingdom, and the rest will be looked 31  
after by God.

*So small the flock, so rich the promise!*

**Have no fear, little flock.** It has pleased your Father to give you 32  
the kingdom.

*—Take all thou art, and give it to the poor*

Sell your property and give all away in charity. Make yourselves 33  
purses that will not wear out. Store up an imperishable treasure  
with God, where no thief breaks in, or moth destroys.

Wherever your treasure is, there your heart will be. 34

*Duly and daily serving him*

Be ready for action and have your lamps lighted, like men 35  
awaiting their master's return from the feast; the moment he 36  
arrives and knocks at the door, they are ready to receive him.

Happy indeed the servants whom the master finds awake at his 37  
return! Believe me, he will sit them at his table, and put on his  
apron, and come himself and wait upon them.

And if he comes late in the night, or early in the morning, and 38  
still finds them ready, happy those servants!

At least you know that if the master of the house knew the hour 39  
when the thief was coming, he would take care not to have his  
house broken into.

Therefore you too must be ready; for the Son of Man will come 40  
at a moment when you least expect him."

*Tears of years unharvested*

41 Peter asked him, “Do you mean this parable only for us, or is it for everyone?”

42 And the Lord replied, “Who do you think is a reliable and careful steward? Whom does the master put in charge of his servants, to distribute rations when they are due?

43 Happy the servant whom the master finds doing his duty when he comes. I assure you, he will put him in charge of his whole business.

44 Suppose, however, that that servant says to himself, ‘My master won’t be back for a long time yet!’ Suppose he starts bullying the men and women in his care, or goes in for orgies of eating

45 and drinking—what then? His master will come on a day when he is not expected, at an hour that he does not know, and will give him a trouncing; he will put him down with the good-for-nothings.

46 When a servant knows his master’s wishes but does not follow them up or carry them out, he will be severely punished. But when a servant does not know his master’s wishes—even if he does wrong and deserves a beating—he will be less severely punished.

If much has been given to a man, much will be expected of him; **and the more has been entrusted to him, the more will be demanded of him.**

*Far into the country of Sorrow*

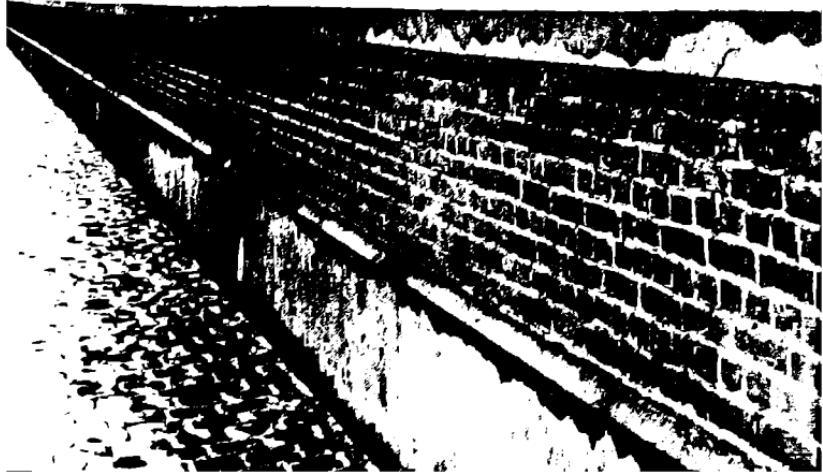
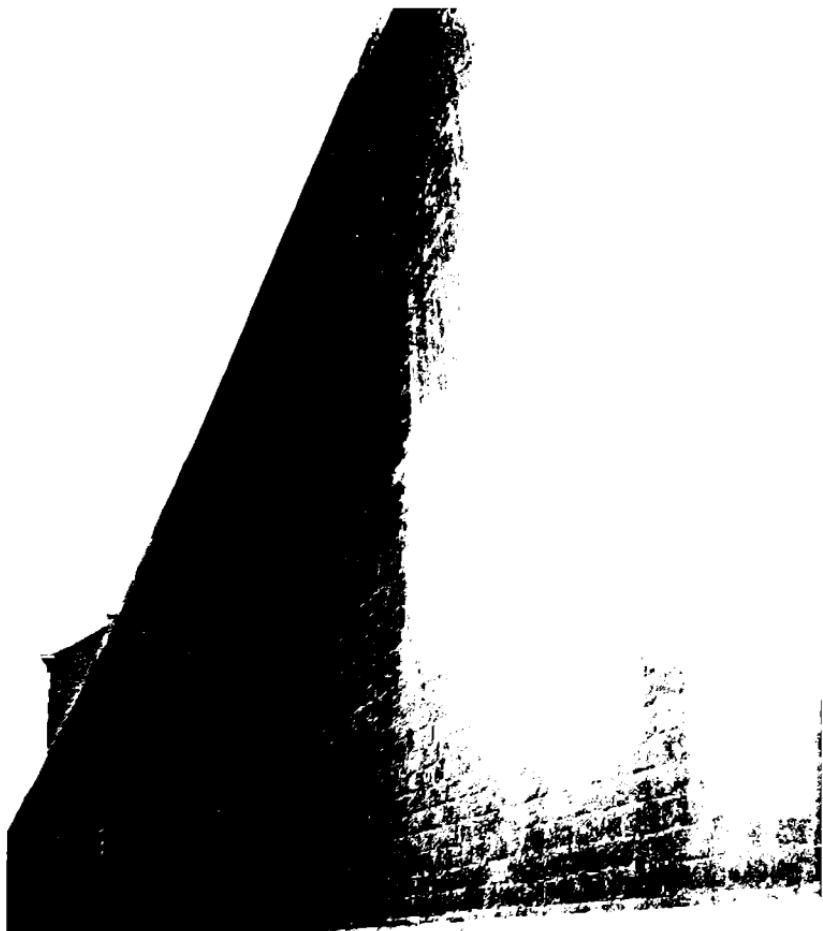
49 I have come to set fire to the world. And how I wish the flames were already kindled!

50 But first I have to pass through a baptism of suffering, and great is my anguish until it be over.

51 Do you think that I have come to bring peace to the world? No,

52 I tell you, not peace but division. From now on, even within a household of five people, there will be division. Three will be divided from two, or two from three: a father from his son, or a son from his father; a mother from her daughter, or a daughter from her mother; a mother-in-law from her daughter-in-law, or a daughter-in-law from her mother-in-law.”





*The proper darkness of humanity*

He said to the people, "Whenever you see clouds rising in the 54 west, you know that rain is on the way; and the rain comes. Whenever a south-wind blows, you know that heat is on the way; 55 and the heat-wave comes.

Hypocrites! You know how to discern the signs of earth and sky. 56 How is it that you cannot discern the signs of the present age? 57 Or why can you not judge for yourselves what is right?

*Can two walk together except they be agreed?*

If you are going to law with an opponent, you will do well to 58 make peace with him on the way to court. For there is a danger that he may land you before the judge, that the judge may hand you over to the police, and the police may throw you in jail.

I tell you, **not until you have paid the last penny** will you get out." 59

*In this world**It is inexplicable, the resolution is in another*

On that occasion people came with news of the Galileans whose 13, 1 blood Pilate had shed along with that of their victims of sacrifice.

Jesus replied, "Do you think that, because they suffered all this, 2 these Galileans were proved to be sinners more than the others? 3

That is not so. I assure you, unless you are converted, you will all perish as they did.

Or do you think that the eighteen people who were killed when 4 the tower collapsed on them at Siloam were more guilty than all the other residents of Jerusalem? That is not so. Unless you 5 are converted, you will all perish as they did."

*Only love hath no decay*

He told them this parable: "A certain man had a fig-tree growing 6 in his vineyard and came to it looking for fruit, but found none.

So he said to his gardener, 'For three years now I have been 7 coming to this tree looking for fruit and have found none. Cut it down! Why let it take the good out of the soil?'

But the gardener replied, 'Sir, let it stand for another year. I'll 8

9 dig round it and manure it. Who knows? It may yet produce fruit. If it doesn't, then you can cut it down.' "

*Honour has come back, as a King, to the earth*

- 10 One sabbath-day Jesus was teaching in one of their synagogues.
- 11 And there was a woman present with a terrible affliction which she had borne for all of eighteen years; she was completely doubled up, and could not straighten herself.
- 12 On seeing her, Jesus called her over and said, as he laid his hands on her, "**Your bondage is at an end.**"
- 13 And she immediately straightened up and began to pour out thanks to God.
- 14 But the master of the synagogue was very angry, because Jesus healed her on the sabbath. He announced to the people, "There are six working-days on which to work. Come to be healed on one of these—and not on the sabbath."
- 15 And the Lord replied to him, "Hypocrites! Is there any one of you who will not untie his ox or ass from the stable on the sabbath and lead it out to water? Here is a daughter of Abraham whom Satan has tied up for eighteen years; should she not have been freed of her handicap, even on the sabbath?"
- 17 His opponents were all put to shame by his words; and the people were all filled with joy over his wonderful deeds.

*What in itself it is, and would become*

- 18 He once said, "What is God's kingdom like? Or how shall I describe it? It is like a grain of mustard-seed which a man planted in his garden; it grew up to become a tree, and the birds of the sky made their home in its branches."
- 20 Again he asked, "How shall I describe God's kingdom?
- 21 It is like a pinch of ferment which a woman worked into a large quantity of flour, until the whole was fermented."

*We are closed in, and the key is turned  
On our uncertainty*

- 22 As he journeyed towards Jerusalem he visited towns and villages



23 and taught in them. Someone asked him, "Sir, is it true that only few are saved?"

24 And Jesus replied, "Strive to enter by the narrow gate. I tell you, many will want to enter, and will not be able.

25 Once the man of the house has got up and closed the door you may come along and stand knocking outside, and say to him, 'Please, Lord, please open to us!'

He will reply, 'You are no friends of mine. Where are you from?'

26 At that you may well protest, 'But we ate and drank with you.'

27 You taught us in our streets,' and still he will say to you: 'You are unknown to me. Get away from me, all you evil-doers!'

28 There, I tell you, will be the wailing and anguish of remorse—when you see Abraham and Isaac and Jacob and all the prophets in God's kingdom, and you yourselves thrown out!

*While the rejected and condemned become  
Agents of the divine*

29 From the east and the west, from the north and the south, they will come and sit at table in God's kingdom.

30 For that is the way: people are now last who will be first, and people first who will be last."

*And I am not in danger: only near to death*

31 At that time some Pharisees came to him and said, "You had better leave this place and go away. Herod plans to kill you."

32 Jesus said to them, "Go and tell that fox: today and tomorrow I drive out demons and work cures; the third day I shall reach

33 my goal. Nevertheless today and tomorrow, and the day after, I must pursue my journey; for it is not possible that a prophet should die outside Jerusalem.

*He who wept for Jerusalem  
Now sees his prophecy extend  
Across the greatest cities of the world*

34 Jerusalem, Jerusalem, the city that kills the prophets and stones the men whom God sends to you, how often I have wanted to

gather your children, as a hen gathers her brood under her wings, but you were not willing. The word of the prophet will 35 come true: 'your home will be lost to you.'

I tell you this: you shall not see me again until the time comes when you will say, 'God's blessing on him who comes in the name of the Lord.' "

*All that I would like to be is human*

One sabbath-day, when he came to dinner at the house of a 14, 1 leader of the Pharisees, they were all watching him closely.

Directly in front of him there was a man who suffered from swelling of the limbs.

And Jesus asked the doctors of the law and the Pharisees, "Is it 3 permitted to heal on the sabbath or not?"

But they said nothing.

So he laid his hands on the man, healed him, and sent him away. Then he turned to them and said, "If one of you has a child or 5 an ox that falls into a pit, will you not immediately pull it out, even on the sabbath?"

And they had no answer to this.

6

*Friend, go up higher*

He noticed how the guests were trying to get places of honour 7 at the table, so he told them this parable: "Whenever you are 8 invited to a wedding-feast, be sure not to go to the place of honour. For it could happen that someone more important than you has been invited, and the host may have to come to you and 9 say, 'Give this man your place.' Then you will have to swallow your pride and go down to the last place.

Whenever you are invited you should go instead to the last place, 10 so that when the host comes along, he will say to you, 'Friend, go up higher.' And you will be distinguished before all your fellow-guests.

The man who exalts himself will be humbled; the man who 11 humbles himself will be exalted."

*But all mankind's concern is charity*

- 12 He said to his host, "Whenever you give a dinner or a party, take care not to invite your friends or brothers or relatives or rich neighbours; for there is a danger that they may return your invitation and you will be repaid. When giving a banquet you should rather invite the poor, the crippled, the lame, the blind;
- 13 and it will be all to your good that these cannot pay you back, for you will be rewarded on the day that the saints rise from the dead."

*For God's invincible spring our love is made afraid*

- 15 One of the guests who was listening exclaimed, "Happy the man who will feast in God's kingdom!"
- 16 And Jesus told him the following story:
- 17 "A man once gave a great banquet and invited many guests. At the time for the dinner he sent his servant to tell the invited guests, 'Come along, everything is ready.'
- 18 And from the very start they all began to make excuses. One said to him, 'I have bought a farm and I have to go and look it over. My apologies!'
- 19 Another, 'I have bought five yoke of oxen and am going to try them. My apologies!'
- 20 And another, 'I have just married, so I cannot come.'

*They told me there, that He was lately gone  
About some land, which He had dearly bought*

- 21 The servant came and reported all this to his master. And the man of the house was very angry, so he said to his servant, 'Go out quickly to the city-squares and streets and bring the poor people in here, and the crippled, the blind, and the lame.'
- 22 The servant reported, 'Sir, your orders have been carried out, but there is still room.'
- 23 And the master said to his servant, 'Go out along the roads and the hedge-rows and compel them to come in, so that my house
- 24 may be filled. For I tell you, none of those who were invited shall enjoy my banquet.'"

*It is one thing to be asked to leave sin and evil, quite another to leave the good, the great, the beautiful*

Large crowds of people were travelling the road with him. And 25  
 Jesus turned round and said to them, "If anyone comes to me 26  
 without setting aside his father, mother, wife, children, brothers,  
 sisters—yes, even his own life—he cannot be my disciple.

Whoever is not prepared to carry his cross and come after me, 27  
 cannot be my disciple.

*Now comes the pain of truth, to whom 'tis pain*

Suppose one of you is thinking of putting up a building. Will he 28  
 not first sit down and count the cost, to see if he has enough to  
 finish it? Otherwise, when he has laid the foundations and cannot 29  
 complete the work, his neighbours will start making fun of him: 30  
 'Look at the fellow who started to build, and couldn't finish!'

Or suppose a king is making war on another king. Will he not 31  
 first sit down and seek advice before setting out, to see whether  
 with an army of ten divisions he is strong enough to take on an  
 enemy attacking with twenty? If not, he will send delegates to 32  
 sue for peace while the enemy is still a long way off.

So too, if anyone among you is not prepared to give up all belonging- 33  
 ing to him he cannot be my disciple.

*The mortal sickness of a mind*

Salt is useful. But if salt becomes insipid, is there any way of 34  
 restoring its taste? It is no longer fit for either soil or dung-heap. 35  
 It is just thrown out.

Whoever has ears to hear with, let him listen."

*The wretched plead against us; multitudes  
 Countless and vehement, the Sons of God*

All the tax-collectors and the social outcasts were also approach- 15, 1  
 ing Jesus to listen to him.

But the Pharisees and the doctors of the law murmured dis- 2  
 approval. "Why," they said, "this man receives sinners and  
 dines with them!"

*The heart half broken in ashes and in lies  
But sustained by the immensity of the divine*

- 3 Jesus replied with the following story: “Suppose one of you has a hundred sheep and loses one of them. Will he not leave the ninety-nine others wander on the moor and go looking for the one that was lost, until he finds it? And how glad he will be to find it! He will carry it on his shoulders, and go home and invite his friends and neighbours and say to them, ‘Come and rejoice with me; I have found the sheep that I lost!’
- 7 So too, I tell you, there will be more joy in heaven over one sinner who repents than over ninety-nine good people who don’t have to repent.
- 8 Or suppose a woman has ten silver coins and loses one of them. Will she not light a lamp and sweep the house and search everywhere until she finds it?
- 9 And as soon as she finds it she calls in her friends and neighbours and says to them, ‘Rejoice with me! I have found the silver that I lost.’
- 10 So too, I tell you, there is joy among God’s angels over a single sinner who repents.”

*I fled him down the nights and down the days  
I fled him down the arches of the years*

- 11 Then he told another story:
- 12 “A man once had two sons. And the younger one said to his father, ‘Father, let me have my share of the property.’ So the father shared his property between them.
- 13 Some days later, the younger son gathered up his belongings and left home for a country far away, where he soon squandered his money, living recklessly.
- 14 Then, when he had spent everything, a terrible famine came to that country, and he began to suffer need. So he went and got a job from a citizen, who sent him to look after pigs on his farm;
- 16 and he would have liked to fill his belly with the swill fed to the pigs, but no one gave him a thing.
- 17 Finally he came to his senses and began to reflect, ‘To think of



all the servants employed by my father and the plenty they have to eat, while I'm here dying of hunger!

- 18 I will get ready and go back to my father. I will say to him,
- 19 Father, I have sinned against God and against you. I'm no longer fit to be called your son. Treat me as one of your paid servants.'
- 20 So he got ready and went back to his father. And his father saw him coming when he was still a long way from home; he felt sorry for him and, running out to meet him, hugged him and kissed him.
- 21 And the son said to him, 'Father, I have sinned against God and against you; I am no longer fit to be called your son.'
- 22 But the father said to his servants, 'Go quickly there! Get a good Sunday suit and dress him! Put a ring on his finger and shoes on his feet, and bring in that stall-fed calf and kill it. We're going to celebrate with a dinner. For this son of mine was dead and has come to life; he was lost, and has been found.'
- 23 So they began to celebrate.

*Victim to his heart's invisible furies*

- 25 Now the elder son was still out on the farm. And as he got near the house on his way home, he could hear the sound of music and dancing. He called one of the servants and asked what it was all about. And he was told, 'Your brother has come back and your father has killed the stall-fed calf out of joy that he has received him safe and well.'
- 28 This made him so angry that he would not go into the house; and his father came out and tried to calm him down.
- 29 'Look!' he answered back to his father, 'I have slaved hard for you during all these years and I have never disobeyed your orders. And yet, you never gave me so much as a kid-goat, to let me celebrate with my friends. But when this son of yours comes back, having spent all your money on prostitutes, you go and kill for him the stall-fed calf!'
- 31 'My boy,' replied his father, 'you have always been with me; everything I have is yours. But the least we could do was to have a dinner and celebrate. Your brother here was dead and has come to life; he was lost and has been found.' "
- 32

*What buried worm of guilt,  
Or what malignant doubt?*

He said to his disciples:

16, 1

"A rich man once had a manager who was reported to him for mismanaging his property.

So he summoned him and said, 'What is this I hear about you? 2  
I want a report of what you have been doing. You can't continue to be manager.'

*And all arrogance of earthen riches*

So the manager began to think it over: 'What am I to do? My 3 employer is dismissing me from my job. Digging is beyond me, and I'd rather die than start begging.

But of course! Now that I'm losing my job as manager, the thing 4 to do is to make friends who will give me hospitality.'

So he called in his master's debtors, one at a time. 5

He asked the first, 'How much do you owe my master?'

And he replied: 'A hundred casks of olive-oil.' 6

'Quick!' said the manager, 'take your account-book, sit down and write fifty.'

He asked the second, 'How much do you owe my master?' 7

And he replied, 'A hundred bushels of wheat.'

'Take your account-book and write eighty,' said the manager."

And the Lord commended the dishonest manager for the foresight he showed. He added, "The men of this world, in their dealings with their own people, show greater foresight than the children of light. 8

*Who love their fellows even to the death  
Who feel the giant agony of the world*

I say to you then, use that evil money to make yourselves friends; 9 when the money ceases to count, you will be received into the eternal home.

*Heaven is our heritage  
Earth but a player's stage*

The man who is faithful in the little things is faithful also in the 10

great; the man who is dishonest in the little things is dishonest also in the great.

- 11 **If you have not been faithful in your use of evil money, who will trust you with real wealth?** If you have not been faithful in what belongs to another, who will give you what is your own?

*Life's business—a terrible choice*

- 13 A servant cannot serve two masters. Either he will hate the one and love the other; or he will take to the one and despise the other. You cannot at the same time serve God and money."

*I have seen the righteous forsaken*

- 14 Now the Pharisees were fond of money; so when they heard all this they expressed their scorn.
- 15 And Jesus said to them, "You Pharisees think yourselves righteous before men, but the verdict is your own. God sees through you; for what men count as distinction God regards as an abomination.

*O Christ who holds the open gate*

- 16 The law and the prophets had their day until John. Since then God's kingdom is being preached, and all are storming into it.
- 17 Heaven and earth will pass away sooner than the smallest detail of the law will lose its force.

*Till death us do part*

- 18 Any man who divorces his wife and marries another commits adultery; and any man who marries a wife divorced from her husband commits adultery.

*Oh teach me to see Death and not to fear*

- 19 There was once a rich man who used dress in clothes of the finest material and enjoy himself in a big way day after day.
- 20 And there was a poor man called Lazarus who lay, covered with sores, outside the rich man's door, asking only to be fed with



scraps from his table. Even the dogs used come and lick his sores.

22 Now one day the poor man died and was carried away by the angels to recline at the feast with Abraham.  
And the rich man also died and was buried.

23 From his torment in the world of the dead he looked up and saw Abraham in the far distance, and Lazarus in happiness with him.

24 So he called to him, 'Father Abraham, have pity on me! Allow Lazarus to come and dip the tip of his finger in water and cool my tongue; for I suffer agony in this flame.'

25 And Abraham replied, 'Son, remember that during your life you received the good things and Lazarus the bad. So he is now being comforted here, whereas you suffer pain.'

26 Besides, there is a great gulf set between us; those who wish to cross from our place to yours cannot do so, nor can your people come over to us.'

27 And the rich man said, 'Then I beg you, Father Abraham, to send him to my father's house; for I still have five brothers. If only he could warn them, lest they, too, come to this place of torment.'

28 'They have Moses and the Prophets,' said Abraham, 'let them listen to them.'

30 And the rich man said, 'No, they won't, Father Abraham; but if someone from the dead visits them, then they will change their ways.'

31 And Abraham replied, 'If they won't listen to Moses and the Prophets, neither will they be impressed if someone rises from the dead.' "

*The worst sin towards our fellow-creatures*

17, 1 He said to his disciples, "It is impossible that scandal and corruption should ever have an end; but woe to any man who causes scandal!

2 It would be better for him to be hurled into the sea with a mill-stone hung about his neck, than to cause one of these little ones to fall away. So be careful.

*Corroding silence is the worst*

3 If a fellow-Christian wrongs you, admonish him; and if he is

sorry for it, forgive him. Even if he wrongs you seven times a 4 day, and comes back seven times saying 'I'm sorry!', you must still forgive him."

*That Light whose smile kindles the universe*

The Apostles said to the Lord, "Increase our faith". And the 5 Lord replied, "If you had faith no greater than a mustard-seed, you could say to this mulberry-tree, 'Be uprooted and planted in the sea' and it would obey you.

*To give and not to count the cost*

Suppose one of you employs a ploughman or a shepherd. 7  
Will you say to him, when he comes in from the fields, 'Sit down here and eat'?  
Won't you rather say, 'Get me my dinner! Put on your apron and 8  
serve me, while I eat and drink; afterwards you can eat yourself.'?  
Is the servant to be thanked for doing what he was told? 9  
The same with you. When you have done all you have been told 10  
to do, your comment should be: 'We're just ordinary servants;  
we have only done our duty.' "

*Beggar that I am, I am even poor in thanks*

On his way up to Jerusalem he was going through Samaria and 11  
Galilee. And as he was entering a certain village ten lepers were 12  
there to meet him. They stood well out of the way and raised 13  
their voices to say, "Jesus, Master, have pity on us!"  
Seeing them Jesus said, "Go and show yourselves to the priests." 14  
And while they were on their way they were cured.  
Then one of them, when he found himself cured, returned to 15  
Jesus, praising God at the top of his voice. He threw himself at 16  
his feet to thank him. And the same man was a Samaritan.  
Jesus said, "Were there not ten lepers cured? Where, then, are 17  
the other nine? Was none of them prepared to come back and give 18  
thanks to God except this foreigner?"  
And he said to him, "Go your way; your faith has saved you." 19

*Divine providence has a noiseless course*

20 Asked by the Pharisees when the kingdom of God was going to come, Jesus replied, "God's kingdom does not come in a way that can be observed. It will be impossible to say, 'Look, it is here' or 'Look, it is there'. For the kingdom of God is already among you."

*Though often named He is unknown  
To the dark kingdom at his feet*

22 Turning to his disciples he said, "A time will come when you will desire to see one of the days of the Son of Man, but will not see it.  
23 People will say to you, 'Look there!' or 'Look here!' But stay where you are, and do not go running after it.  
24 For as lightning flashes its light from one end of the sky to the other, so the Son of Man will be on the day of his coming.  
25 But he must first go through great suffering and be rejected by the men of this generation.

*Luxury and riot, feast and dance*

26 As things were in the days of Noah, so they will be in the days of the Son of Man.  
27 **People were eating and drinking**, marrying and being married, until the day when Noah entered the ark. And then the flood came and destroyed them all.  
28 So too in the days of Lot; people were eating and drinking,  
29 buying and selling, planting and building, until the day that Lot came out from Sodom, when fire and sulphur rained down from heaven and destroyed them all.  
30 And that too is how it will be on the day that the Son of Man is revealed.

*Everlasting farewells*

31 On that day, if a man should happen to be on the roof of his house and his goods are all downstairs, let him not go down to





fetch them; if he is outside on his farm, let him not turn back. Remember what happened to Lot's wife! 32  
 Whoever tries to preserve his life will lose it; whoever is prepared to lose it, will preserve it. 33  
 On that night, I tell you, two men will be in the same bed; one will be taken and the other left. Two women will be grinding flour at the same mill; one will be taken and the other left." 35  
 "Where, Lord?" the disciples asked. 37  
 And he replied, "Where the carcass lies, there the vultures gather."

*We are not alone in our loneliness*

To show how unfailingly one must pray, without ever giving up, Jesus told this story:

"In a certain town there was a judge, who neither feared God nor bowed to men. And in the same town there was a widow, who was for ever coming to him with the same story: 'Defend me against my accuser.' For a long time the judge refused; but in the end he said to himself, 'I'm not one to fear God or bow to men, but this widow is getting on my nerves. I will defend her. If I wait any longer she'll drive me crazy.'

Now, listen to that decision by a godless judge!" said the Lord. 6  
 "And will not God see that justice is done for his chosen ones, 7  
 who call to him day and night? Or will he leave them waiting? 8  
 I tell you, he will come to their help quickly.  
 But when the Son of Man does come, **will he find faith on earth?"**

*One to brag, the other to pray*

There were some people who were full of confidence in themselves and in their own piety, while they despised others. To these Jesus told this story:

"Two men went up to the temple to pray; one was a Pharisee, 10  
 the other a tax-collector.  
 The Pharisee stood upright and prayed like this: 'I thank you, 11  
 God, that I am not like other men—the thieves, the crooks, the

12 adulterers—or like this tax-collector here! I fast twice a week; I pay tithes of my whole income.'

13 But the tax-collector stood well behind and would not even raise his eyes to heaven; he struck his breast and said, 'O God, have mercy on me a sinner.'

14 I tell you, he was the one who went home acquitted by God—not the other.  
The man who exalts himself will be humbled; the man who humbles himself will be exalted."

*Here a little child I stand*

15 Women even brought their babies to him, to have him touch them; and when the disciples saw it, they scolded them.

16 But Jesus called for the children and said to his disciples, "**Let the children come to me, and do not stop them;** for God's kingdom belongs to their kind.

17 Believe me, anyone who does not receive God's kingdom as a child shall not enter it."

*Yet was I sore afraid,  
Lest having him I must have nought beside*

18 A leading Councillor of the Jews said to him, "Good Master, what must I do to enter eternal life?"

19 And Jesus said to him, "Why do you call me good? No one is good except the one God. You know the commandments:

20 'Do not commit adultery, do not kill, do not steal, do not give false witness, honour your father and your mother.' "

21 "But I have kept all these ever since I was a boy," said the man.

22 And to this Jesus replied, "Only one thing is wanting to you. Sell your property and give the money to the poor—your wealth will be in heaven—and then come and follow me."

23 And the man became very saddened at this reply, because he was extremely rich.

*Dust are our frames; and gilded dust our pride*

24 Seeing how he reacted Jesus said, "How hard it will be for the rich to enter God's kingdom. It is easier for a camel to pass





through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter God's kingdom."

"Who then can be saved?" his hearers said. 26  
And he replied, "What is impossible for men is possible for God." 27

*How serenely they walk, not as I!*

"Look, now," said Peter, "we have given up all belonging to us 28  
and have followed you!"

And Jesus said to them, "Believe me, no man gives up home, 29  
wife, brothers, parents, or children, for the sake of God's kingdom, who will not get a rich reward—even in the present 30  
age. And in the world to come he will have eternal life."

*May we  
Be mindful of this road to Calvary*

He took the Twelve aside and said to them, "We are now going 31  
up to Jerusalem, and all the prophecies of Scripture are to be fulfilled in the Son of Man. He will be handed over to the pagans; 32  
they will mock him, insult him, spit upon him; they will beat 33  
him cruelly and put him to death; and on the third day he will rise again."

But the disciples did not grasp this at all; his words remained 34  
for them a complete mystery which they did not understand.

*Light to shine upon the road*

As he was approaching Jericho a blind man sat begging by the 35  
roadside. Hearing the noise of the passing crowd, he asked what 36  
it was all about; and they told him that Jesus of Nazareth was 37  
coming. He called out, "Jesus, Son of David, have pity on me!" 38  
And the people up in front warned him to hold his tongue. 39  
But he shouted all the more, "Son of David, have pity on me!"  
So Jesus stopped and asked them to bring the man to him. "What 40  
do you want of me?" he asked him, as soon as he came near.  
And the blind man answered, "**Lord, that I may see again.**"  
Jesus said, "Receive your sight; your faith has saved you." 42

43 Immediately he got his sight back, and began to follow him, giving thanks to God.  
And all the people who saw it gave praise to God.

*We are too much alone*

19, 1 Jesus entered Jericho and was passing through the town. Now there was this man called Zacchaeus who was a chief tax-collector and very wealthy; he wanted to see what kind of man  
3 Jesus was, but could not do so **because the crowd was very big,**  
4 **and he himself was a small man.** So he ran ahead and climbed a sycamore-tree, to get a view of Jesus as he was passing by.

*He was a man who used to notice such things*

5 When Jesus came to the spot he looked up and said to him, "Zacchaeus, come down quickly! Today I must stay in your house."  
6 Zacchaeus therefore hurried down and was very glad to receive him.  
7 And on seeing it they all began to murmur disapproval. "Why," they said, "this man has entered the house of a sinner to be his guest!"  
8 But Zacchaeus stood a moment and said to the Lord, "Lord, I am prepared to give half my goods to the poor; and if I have wronged any man, I will repay him four times over."  
9 And Jesus said, "Salvation has come to this house today. For  
10 this man too is a son of Abraham; and the Son of Man has come to seek and to save what was lost."

*But all the rest is nothing,  
When you have tired your thoughts on earthly things*

11 The people who heard these things began to think, now that he was nearing Jerusalem, that the kingdom of God would be  
12 revealed at once. Jesus therefore told them another parable: "A nobleman once went to a distant country to receive a kingdom, intending to return.  
13 So he summoned ten of his servants and gave to each a large sum of silver. 'Trade with it,' he said, 'until I return.'



14 But his fellow-citizens hated this man and sent a delegation after him to say, 'We refuse to have you as our ruler.'

*My task accomplished and the long day done*

15 In due course he returned after being invested as king and summoned the servants to whom he had given the silver, to see how each had got on.

16 The first came to him and said, 'Sir, your sum of silver has increased ten times.'

17 And the king replied, 'Well done! You're an excellent servant. Since you've proved yourself in this small matter, you shall have charge of ten cities.'

18 The second servant came and said, 'Sir, your sum of silver has increased five times.'

19 And the king said to him, 'You shall have charge of five cities.'

*The past unsighed for and the future sure?*

20 Then the other servant came and said, 'Here, sir, is your sum of silver. I have kept it hidden away in a napkin. I was afraid of you, because you're a hard man; you collect what you didn't put away, and you reap what you didn't sow.'

22 And the king replied to him, 'My verdict on you has come from your own lips, you lazy fellow! You knew that I'm a hard man, that I collect what I didn't put away, and reap what I didn't sow. Was there any reason then for not investing my money in the banks, so that on my return I should have got it back with interest?'

24 He said to the attendants, 'Take that silver from him and give it to the man who made the big profit.'

25 And they said to him, 'Sir, that man already has a fortune.'

26 'I tell you,' he said, 'when a man has something to start with, he will be given more; but whoever has nothing in reserve will forfeit even what he has.'

27 As for my enemies, who would not have me as their king, bring them here and kill them before my eyes.' "

28 Having said this Jesus continued his journey, heading towards Jerusalem.

*O Christ the Patron of the Poor*

When he got to Bethphage and Bethany on the Mount of Olives, 29 he sent ahead two of his disciples and said to them, "Go into 30 the village facing you, and as you enter it you will find a donkey tethered on which no man has yet ridden. Untie it and bring it to me. If anyone asks you, 'Why are you untying the donkey?' 31 say to him, 'The Lord has need of it.' "

The messengers went off and found everything as he had said. 32 As they were untying the donkey, the owners asked them what 33 they were doing, and they replied, "The Lord has need of it." 34 They brought the donkey to Jesus, flung their coats on its back, 35 and mounted him on it. And as he rode off, others spread their 36 coats on the road.

*and everywhere*

*The ceremony of innocence is drowned*

Soon he approached the descent on the other side of the Mount 37 of Olives. And the whole crowd of disciples burst out in joyful 38 praise to God for all the mighty works they had seen. They shouted aloud:

"Hail to the king,  
who comes in the name of the Lord.  
Peace in heaven,  
And glory to God on high!"

Some of the Pharisees among the crowd said to him, "Master, 39 tell your disciples to be quiet."

But Jesus replied, "If they keep quiet, the very stones will cry 40 out."

*Since Thou didst weep, as many tears  
Have flowed like hour-glass sand*

As he came nearer, Jesus had a view of the whole city. He wept 41 over it and said, "If only you knew at this moment the way to your 42 peace. But no, it is hidden from your eyes. A time will come upon 43 you, when your enemies will barricade you all around and hem you in on every side; when they will raze you to the ground— 44

you and your people within you—and will not leave a stone standing upon a stone, because you did not open your eyes to the time of God's gracious coming."

*The nerve for action, the spark of indignation*

45 Then he entered the temple and began to drive out the people  
 46 who were trading there. He said, "It is written in Scripture: 'My house shall be a house of prayer'; but you have made it a hide-out for thieves."

*Deceit that loves the night and fears the day*

47 Every day he was teaching in the temple. And the chief priests, doctors of the law, and leading citizens of the people were most  
 48 anxious to do away with him; but they were at a loss what action to take, for the people were all enthralled by his words.

*Soon hot, soon cold,  
 There is no stability*

20, 1 One day he was in the temple, teaching and proclaiming the gospel to the people, when a delegation of chief priests, doctors  
 2 of the law, and elders accosted him and said, "We would like to know by what authority you do these things. Who gave you this authority?"  
 3 Jesus replied, "I too have a question for you, if you will be so  
 4 good as to answer me. What authority had John for his baptism? Was it from God or from men?"  
 5 Having talked it over among themselves, they concluded, "If we say from God, he will ask us why we didn't put faith in John;  
 6 if we say from men, the people will all stone us, for they are convinced that John was a prophet."  
 7 So they replied that they did not know.  
 8 And Jesus said, "Neither will I tell you by what authority I do these things."

*But let not all that wealth of love be wasted*

9 He went on to tell the people this story:  
 "A man once planted a vineyard and let it out to tenants, while he himself went abroad for a long time.



- 10 In due course he sent a servant to the tenants to collect his share of the wine-harvest; but the tenants beat up the servant and sent him back empty-handed.
- 11 He sent a second servant; and they beat him up too, treated him outrageously, and sent him back empty-handed.
- 12 He sent a third servant; but they wounded this one too, and threw him out.
- 13 So the owner of the vineyard said to himself, 'What can I do now—except to send my own son who is dear to me? Perhaps they will respect him.'
- 14 And as soon as the tenants saw who it was, they decided on their plan: 'This is the son and heir. Let's kill him, and the property will be ours.'
- 15 So they threw out the son from the vineyard and killed him.

Now what do you think the owner of the vineyard will do to these men?

- 16 He will come and destroy these tenants and give the vineyard to others."

*Moving towards the unfathomable dark*

"God forbid!" they replied.

- 17 But Jesus, fixing his eyes on them, said, "What then does this saying of Scripture mean:  
'The stone rejected by the builders has itself become the foundation-stone'?
- 18 Anyone who falls on this stone will be broken; and anyone on whom it falls will be crushed."
- 19 The doctors of the law and the chief priests would have given anything to arrest him then and there, for they knew that this parable was against themselves; but they feared the people.

*Two spirits of a diverse love  
Contend for loving masterdom*

- 20 So they kept an eye out. They had as their agents men who pretended to be pious folk, whom they sent to him, hoping to catch him in his words, and to hand him over to the authority and jurisdiction of the governor.

These questioned him as follows: "Master, we know that you 21 are a man of integrity, that you teach the way of God in all truth and are not swayed by public opinion.

What do you think? Is it right for us to pay tax to Caesar or 22 not?"

But Jesus, knowing what was behind it, said to them, "Show me 23 the coin of the tax. This image I see here, and this inscription—to whom do they belong?"

They replied, "To Caesar."

And he said to them, "Give then to Caesar what is Caesar's, and 25 to God what is God's."

So they failed to catch him out in anything he said to the people. 26 After this last reply they were stunned to silence.

*Only those who have flown home to God have flown at all*

Some of the Sadducee party, the people who deny the resurrection, 27 approached him and asked the following question: "Master, 28 Moses prescribed for us that if ever a man dies and leaves a wife but no children, his brother should marry the wife and raise up a family to the dead man.

Now there were once seven brothers. The first took a wife and 29 died without children; and the second and third, and all the rest 30 of the seven, took her as wife, and died, all of them, without leaving children. Then the wife herself died. 32

Now which of these will have her as wife on the day of resurrection? 33 For all seven had married her."

*Look for me in the nurseries of heaven*

Jesus replied, "In this world men and women marry. But those 34 who are judged worthy to participate in that other world and in the resurrection of the dead neither marry nor are married. For 36 they are no longer subject to death, but are like angels; having been privileged to rise, they are children of God.

As for the resurrection of the dead, Moses gave the answer in 37 the passage about the burning bush. He speaks of the Lord as 38 the 'God of Abraham, God of Isaac, God of Jacob.' Thus he is not a God of the dead, but of the living; for all are alive to him."

39 And at this even some doctors of the law spoke up and said, "Well answered, Master!"  
40 In fact no one dared to ask him any more questions.

*In me past, present, future, meet*

41 But he put this question to them: "How can the Messiah be called David's Son? For David himself says in the book of Psalms, 'The Lord said to my lord, Sit at my right hand, until I lay your enemies under your feet.'

44 If David calls him 'Lord', how can the Messiah be David's Son?"

*He waited after no pomp and reverence*

45 He said to his disciples, in the hearing of the whole crowd, "Do not be led by the doctors of the law. What they like is to parade around in long robes, and to be saluted respectfully in the streets; they look for reserved seats in the synagogues and top places at banquets; they swallow up the property of widows, and yet they make pretence of praying long prayers. For them, judgement will be all the more severe."

*The will of the giver is more than the gift*

21, 1 Jesus happened to notice the rich throwing their offerings into the temple treasury; and he also saw a poor widow throwing in a couple of small coins.  
3 "Believe me," he said, "this poor widow has given more than 4 all of them. All these others have given what they could well afford; she was needy, and yet she gave the last penny she had for a living."

*When the world despairs*

5 Some of them were discussing the temple and the fine appearance of its splendid stone-work and votive offerings. Jesus said to them, "A time will come when not a single stone of what you see there will be left intact. All will be torn asunder."

And they asked him, "Master, when will this be? And what will 7  
be the sign that this is to happen?"

He replied, "Take care that you are not led astray. Many will 8  
come claiming my authority and saying, 'I am the one', or 'The  
time has come', but do not follow them. And when you hear of 9  
war and rebellions, do not be alarmed; for these must inevitably  
come. The end is not yet."

He also told them, "Nation will rise against nation, kingdom 10  
against kingdom. There will be mighty earthquakes, and in some 11  
places famines and plagues; frightening portents will occur, and  
great signs from heaven.

*Carried in the hand of God*

But prior to all this they will arrest and persecute you, and 12  
hand you over to assemblies, and put you in prison, and bring you  
before kings and rulers because of my name. Here then will be 13  
your chance to give witness to me. Be assured therefore that 14  
you must not worry beforehand about your defence. For I will 15  
inspire you with such eloquence and wisdom that none of your  
enemies will be able to oppose you or refute you.

You will be given up even by parents and brothers, by relatives 16  
and friends. Some of you will be put to death; and you will be 17  
hated by all men because of my name. Nevertheless, not a hair 18  
of your heads will perish; so long as you hold out patiently, 19  
your lives will be safe.

*Till the Spinner of the Years  
Said "Now!"*

When you see Jerusalem surrounded by armies, then you may 20  
know that the hour of its destruction has come. Let those who  
are in Judaea make for the mountains; let those who are in the  
city get out; let those who are in the country stay away. For 22  
these will be the days of punishment, to bring about everything  
foretold in the Scriptures.

Alas for women with child, or with infants at the breast when 23  
those days come! There will be great distress in the land, and  
punishment for this people. They will fall by the edge of the 24

sword, and will be led away captive among all the nations. Jerusalem will be trampled on by the gentile nations, until these too have had their day.

- 25 Portents will appear in the sun, the moon, and the stars; on earth there will be dismay among the peoples, confusion over the roar of the surging sea. Men will die from fear, from dread of what is to come upon the world; for the mighty powers of heaven will be shaken.
- 27 And after that the Son of Man will be seen coming in a cloud with great power and splendour.
- 28 When all this begins to happen, then you can stand and raise your heads; for the hour of your salvation is at hand.”

*The price of freedom—vigilance*

- 29 And he gave them a parable: “Look at the fig-tree or any other tree. Once they begin to sprout, you know at a glance that summer is near.
- 31 In the same way, when you see all this happen, you can know for sure that God’s kingdom is near.
- 32 Believe me, this generation will not have passed away before all these things happen.
- 33 Heaven and earth will pass away; my words will not pass away.

*Act—in the living present  
Heart within and God o'erhead*

- 34 Watch yourselves! **Do not let your minds become clouded** by dissipation, or drunkenness, or the cares of the world, lest that day come upon you suddenly like the shutting of a trap; for that day will surely come—upon all the inhabitants of the whole world.
- 36 Stay awake, therefore! Pray unceasingly, so as to be able to escape these coming trials and to stand in the presence of the Son of Man.”
- 37 During the day Jesus used teach in the temple; late in the evening
- 38 he used go out to spend the night on the Mount of Olives. And first thing in the morning the people used come to the temple to hear him.



*Only a friend can betray*

22, 1 The feast of the unleavened bread or the Pasch was drawing  
2 near. And the chief priests and doctors of the law were still at a  
loss how they would do away with him, for they feared the  
people.

3 Then Satan entered the heart of Judas, the man called Iscariot,  
4 who belonged to the group of the Twelve. He went off and dis-  
cussed with the chief priests and the temple-officers his plan for  
5 betraying Jesus to them. They were very pleased and agreed to  
6 pay him money. Judas gave them his word, and from then on  
began to look out for a suitable occasion; he would betray him  
to them when the people were not around.

*A large room, prepared*

7 Then came the day of the unleavened bread, when the paschal  
8 lamb had to be sacrificed. Jesus sent off Peter and John, saying  
to them, "Go and prepare the pasch for us."

9 "Where do you wish us to prepare?" they said to him.  
10 And he replied, "As you go into the city you will be met by a  
man carrying a jar of water. Follow him to the house he will  
11 enter and say to the owner, 'The Master wishes to know where  
is the dining-room in which I am to eat the pasch with my  
12 disciples.' He will show you a large room upstairs, laid out in  
readiness. And there you can prepare."

13 They went away, found everything as he had told them, and  
prepared the pasch.

*He is in agony till the world ends*

14 The time having come, Jesus sat down to supper along with the  
15 Apostles. He said to them, "I have very much desired to eat this  
16 pasch with you before my death; I tell you, never again shall I  
eat the pasch until it has been fulfilled in God's kingdom."  
17 Having taken a cup of wine, he gave thanks and said, "Take this  
18 and share it among you; for I tell you, never again shall I drink  
this wine of the grape until the kingdom of God has come."

Then he took bread and gave thanks; and as he broke it and gave 19 it to them, he said, "This is my body which is sacrificed for you. Do this in remembrance of me."

So too, after the supper, he passed the cup to them, saying, "This 20 cup seals the new covenant in my blood, which is to be shed for you.

*And we are onlookers at the crime*

Mark my word, the man who will betray me has his hand with 21 me on this table!

The Son of Man must go the way determined for him. Nevertheless- 22 woe to the man by whom he is betrayed!"

And they began to ask one another who among them could 23 possibly do this deed.

*Freely we serve because we freely love*

They also began to squabble as to which of them ranked the 24 highest.

So Jesus said to them, "The rulers of the foreign nations rule 25 them with a high hand, and the men in authority call themselves benefactors.

But with you it shall be different. The highest among you shall 26 be as the youngest; and the leader among you as the servant.

For who is the greater, the one who sits at table or the one who 27 serves? Surely the one who sits at table. And yet I am with you as the one who serves.

And you are the men who have stood loyal to me during my 28 trials. I therefore assign the kingdom to you, as the Father has 29 assigned the kingdom to me. You shall eat and drink at my table 30 in my kingdom; you shall sit on thrones as judges over the twelve tribes of Israel.

*Let us void out this nonsense and be healed*

Simon, Simon, listen to me. Satan has asked for you all, to sift 31 you like wheat. But for you I have prayed that your faith may 32 not fail. Let you, then, when you have come back, be a support to your brothers."

LUKE 22

33 Peter replied, "Lord, I am ready to go with you to prison and to death."

34 And Jesus said, "I tell you, Peter, the cock will not crow tonight before you have disowned me three times."

*Unless the battle has preceded there cannot be victory*

35 He said to them, "When I sent you on your mission without bag, or purse, or shoes, did you find yourselves in need?"  
"No," they replied.

36 "Well now it is different," he said. "Whoever has a purse, let him take it, and also a bag. And if anyone is without a sword, let him

37 sell his coat and buy one. For I tell you, the saying of Scripture, 'he was numbered among criminals', must come to pass in me; all prophecies about me are now to be fulfilled."

38 The disciples said to him, "Lord, there are two swords here." And he replied, "It is enough."

*See where the victor-victim bleeds*

39 He left the room and proceeded as was his custom to the Mount  
40 of Olives, accompanied by his disciples. When he arrived at the place he said to them, "Pray that you escape trial."

41 He himself withdrew from them about a stone's throw; and he  
42 fell on his knees and began to pray. "Father," he said, "if it is your will, spare me this cup of suffering. Nevertheless, let your will be done—not mine."

43 There appeared to him an angel from heaven, bringing him  
44 strength. And as his anguish grew greater, he prayed more intensely, and his sweat ran to the ground like drops of blood.

45 On rising from prayer he went to his disciples and found them  
46 asleep; for they were weighed down with sorrow. He said to them, "Why are you sleeping? Rise, and pray that you escape trial."

*The coward does it with a kiss*

47 No sooner had he spoken than a large crowd suddenly appeared, and at their head the man called Judas, one of the Twelve. He came up to Jesus to kiss him.

And Jesus said to him, "Judas, do you betray the Son of Man 48 with a kiss?"

When his companions realized what was happening, they asked, 49 "Lord, shall we strike with the sword?"

One of them struck the high priest's servant and cut off his right 50 ear.

But Jesus, turning to him, said, "Stop! That will do." And 51 he touched the man's ear and healed it.

*But our hearts we lost—how long ago*

Jesus addressed the chief priests, temple-officers, and elders who 52 had come to arrest him, "So you have come with swords and clubs, as if I were a common criminal? Day after day I was with 53 you in the temple, and you did not touch me; but now the hour is yours—and the power of darkness."

*And did not thee deny?*

They seized him, led him away, and took him to the house of 54 the high priest.

Peter followed behind at a distance and took a seat along with 55 others who were sitting round a fire which had been lit in the courtyard.

As he was sitting by the fire, a young servant-girl saw him and 56 looked closely at him. "This man too was a companion of Jesus," she said.

But Peter denied it. "The man is unknown to me, woman," he 57 said.

Shortly afterwards someone else saw him and said, "You too are 58 one of these people."

But Peter answered back, "No, I'm not."

And about an hour later another was emphatic about it: "This 59 man was certainly in his company; he's a Galilean!"

Peter replied, "Listen, I don't know what you are talking about." 60 And as he spoke the cock crowed. 61

The Lord turned round and looked at Peter. And Peter remembered his words: "Before the cock crows to-night you will disown me three times."

He went outside and wept bitter tears. 62

*Derided and defied*

63 The men who had custody of Jesus mocked him and beat him.  
64 Having blindfolded him they would call out, "Prophesy who it was that struck you."  
65 **And they did many other insulting things.**

*Thou forsaken—even thou!*

66 At day-break the elders of the people, chief priests, and doctors of the law, met for a session of the supreme Council, and brought him before them.  
67 "Are you the Messiah?" they asked. "Tell us!"  
68 Jesus replied, "If I tell you, you will not believe, and if I question you, you will not answer. But from now on the Son of Man will be seated at the right hand of Almighty God."  
70 "So you are the Son of God?" they all said.  
And Jesus replied, "You yourselves say what I am."  
71 Then they said, "What more evidence do we need? We have had a confession from his own lips."

*May we draw near  
Considering in our hearts what man is here*

23, 1 The whole assembly then arose, and brought Jesus before  
2 Pilate. And they stated their case against him in these words: "We found this man misleading our people, forbidding tax to be paid to the emperor, and making himself out to be Messiah and king."  
3 Pilate asked him, "Are you the king of the Jews?"  
And Jesus replied, "The words are yours."  
4 Pilate then told the chief priests and the people, "I can find no case against this man."  
5 But they insisted, "He is stirring up the people, preaching his doctrine all over Judaea, from Galilee right down to here."  
6 Hearing mention of the word Galilee, Pilate asked if this was  
7 where the man was from. And when he learned that he belonged to Herod's jurisdiction, he sent him over to Herod, who happened to be in Jerusalem at the time.  
8 Now Herod was delighted to see Jesus. Having heard about him



he had been wanting for a long time to meet him, and was hoping to see a miracle worked by him.

- 9 He therefore questioned him at length, but Jesus gave no reply.
- 10 And the chief priests and doctors of the law stood by, accusing
- 11 him vehemently. Herod and his soldiers treated him with shameful contempt and ridicule. Then they draped him in a gorgeous robe and sent him back to Pilate.
- 12 And from that day friendship was restored between Herod and Pilate; previously they had been enemies.

*A plea to obscure the show of evil*

- 13 Pilate summoned the chief priests, councillors, and people, and
- 14 said to them, "You have brought this man to me on a charge of misleading the people. The fact is that I have examined him in your presence and can find no evidence to support the charge
- 15 you bring against him. And neither could Herod, seeing that he sent him back here. Obviously, therefore, he is not guilty of any
- 16 crime deserving of death. I will have him flogged and let him go."

*Behold the Man : he is Man's Son*

- 18 But they shouted with one voice, "Away with this man! Give us Barabbas!"
- 19 (Barabbas had been thrown in prison for a revolt in the city and for murder.)
- 20 Again Pilate reasoned with them, desiring to release Jesus.
- 21 But they kept shouting, "Crucify him! Crucify him!"
- 22 And for a third time Pilate protested, "What wrong has the man done? I have not found him guilty of any capital charge; so I will have him flogged and let him go."

*Politicians neither love nor hate*

- 23 But they kept insisting with shouts and threats, demanding that he be crucified.
- 24 And their shouts prevailed. In the end Pilate decided to let them
- 25 have their way; he released the man they were asking for, the

one who was in prison for rebellion and murder, and surrendered Jesus to their will.

*In his Master's steps he trod*

They led him away to be crucified. And they laid hold of a man 26 from Cyrene called Simon, who was on his way from the country, and put the cross on his shoulders to have him carry it behind Jesus.

*Mountains and hills, come, come, and fall on me  
And hide me from the heavy wrath of God*

A large number of people were in the procession behind, and 27 many women who gave loud vent to their grief.

Turning to these Jesus said, "Women of Jerusalem, do not weep 28 for me, but for yourselves and for your children. For the days 29 are coming when people will say, 'Happy the women without child, the wombs that have never borne, and the breasts that have never nursed'; when they will call to the mountains, 'Fall 30 upon us', and to the hills, 'Cover us up'. For if this is what they 31 do to the green wood, what will happen the dry?"

*Christ on the Cross! Thorns on his brow*

Two criminals were also led out to be crucified with him. And 32 on reaching the place called 'The Skull', they crucified him—and also the criminals, the one on his right, the other on his left.

*And dying bless the hand that gave the blow*

And Jesus said, "Father, forgive them; for they do not know 34 what they are doing."

The soldiers divided his garments by drawing lots, while the 35 people stood looking on.

And the rulers jeered at him, "The man who saved others! If this is God's Messiah, God's chosen One, let him save himself."

Even the soldiers mocked him, as they ran up to the cross and 36 offered him vinegar. "Save yourself," they said, "if you are the 37 King of the Jews."

LUKE 23

*And his pure soul unto his captain Christ*

38 Over his head there was an inscription: 'This is the king of the Jews.'

39 And one of the two criminals who hung beside him jeered at him, "Aren't you the Messiah? Then save yourself—and us!"

40 But the other answered back and rebuked him, "Have you no fear of God—and you suffering the same punishment? Our fate is just; for we are getting what our crimes deserve. But this man has done no wrong."

42 And turning to him he said, "Jesus, remember me when you come into your kingdom."

43 Jesus replied, "I promise you, today you will be with me in paradise."

*In dim eclipse*

44 It was now about midday; and from then until three o'clock darkness came over the whole earth, with the disappearance of the sun.

And the curtain of the temple was torn in two.

*Into thy hands*

46 Then Jesus called in a loud voice, "Father, I commit myself to you."

And with these words he died.

*Both woe and fury speak*

47 The officer in charge, having seen it all, gave praise to God: "Indeed," he said, "this was an innocent man."

48 And all the people present at the scene, having witnessed everything, returned to their homes beating their breasts.

49 His own friends too were all standing there at a distance; and the women who had followed him from Galilee were also watching.

*These too have their part in me*

*As I too in these*

50 Now there was a man called Joseph from the Jewish town of

Arimathaea, himself a councillor, but a decent, upright man who 51 did not go along with the vote and action of his fellows; in fact he was awaiting the kingdom of God.

Having approached Pilate, Joseph asked for the body of Jesus; 52 and taking it down from the cross he wrapped it in a linen shroud 53 and laid it in a rock-tomb, where nobody had yet been buried.

It was the 'preparation-day' or eve of the sabbath, and the 54 sabbath was about to commence.

And the women who had accompanied Jesus from Galilee went 55 along with Joseph; they saw the tomb and the place where the body was laid, and then returned home to prepare aromatic 56 herbs and perfumes.

On the sabbath itself they rested, as the law prescribed.

*Is it he? Is it surely he?*

But very early on the first day of the week they went to the tomb, 24, 1 bringing the perfumes they had prepared. They found the stone 2 rolled back from the tomb, but on going inside they did not find 3 the body of the Lord Jesus. And then, as they were wondering 4 about this, whom should they see standing beside them but two men, dressed in shining garments. Seized with dismay, they 5 bowed themselves to the ground.

And the men said to them, "Why are you looking for the living among the dead? Remember what he told you while he was still 6 in Galilee, 'The Son of Man must be surrendered to sinful men 7 and crucified; but on the third day he will rise again.' "

And they recalled his words. 8

Then they returned from the tomb and brought the news to the 9 eleven and the others.

These women were Mary the Magdalene, and Johanna, and 10 Mary the mother of James. And the other women who accompanied them confirmed all this to the Apostles.

*And doubt is brother-devil to despair*

The Apostles, however, thought the whole story to be nonsense; 11 they would not believe them.

But on the same day two of them were travelling to a village 12

## LUKE 24

14 called Emmaus, some seven and a half miles from Jerusalem, and were chatting about all these events.

15 As they were deep in conversation, Jesus himself came up and joined them; but their eyes were prevented from recognizing him.

17 He said to them, "This is a lively conversation of yours, as you walk along. What has happened?"  
And they stood still, a sad look in their eyes.

18 One of them called Cleopas remarked, "You must be the only stranger in Jerusalem who has not heard of the events there during these last days!"  
"What events?" he asked.

19 And they replied, "All about Jesus of Nazareth, this man who showed himself a prophet, mighty in deed and in word, in the sight of God and of all the people; how our chief priests and councillors gave him over, and had him sentenced to death and crucified. We were hoping that he was the coming Saviour of Israel; but now, to top it all, this is the third day since these things took place, and some of our women have completely astounded us. Having gone to the tomb at a very early hour and not found his body, they came with a story that they had even seen a vision of angels, who say that he is alive.

24 Finally some of our own companions went to the tomb; and they found that the women's report was true, but himself they did not see."

*To be ignorant of the scriptures is to be ignorant of Christ*

25 He said to them, "How dull and sluggish are your minds, that you will not believe in all that has been foretold by the prophets!

26 Was it not necessary for the Messiah to suffer these things, in order to enter his glory?"

27 He then began with Moses and the Prophets and expounded to them all that stood written in the Scriptures about himself.

28 By this time they had almost arrived at the village to which they were travelling, and their companion made out that he was

29 going further. But they would not hear of it: "Stay with us," they said. "It is now evening and the day is almost over."  
So he went in along with them to stay.

*The holy bread, the food unpriced*

They sat down together to supper. And when he had taken 30 bread in his hands and said the blessing, he broke it and gave it to them.

Then their eyes were opened and they recognized him; and he 31 vanished from their sight.

Thinking it over they realized, "Weren't our hearts on fire within 32 us, as he talked to us during the journey and expounded the Scriptures?" So they got up without delay and returned to 33 Jerusalem; and they found the eleven and their companions already assembled.

They were told, "The Lord has risen indeed and has appeared 34 to Simon."

Then they gave their own account of what had happened on 35 the journey, and how they had recognized him in the breaking of bread.

*Thy everlasting mercy, Christ*

As they were still talking about all this, Jesus himself came and 36 stood among them. But they, in panic and great fear, thought 37 they were seeing a ghost.

And he said to them, "Why this anxiety? And why these thoughts 38 in your minds? Look at my hands and feet. It is I! Touch me 39 and see. A ghost does not have flesh and blood as you see in me."

But it was too good to be true, and they were still slow to believe, 41 and still wondering.

"Have you anything here to eat?" he asked them.

And when they gave him some fried fish he took it and ate it in 42 their presence.

*I know that Christ had given me birth  
To brother all the souls on earth*

He said to them, "These things bring to fulfilment the words 44 that I spoke while I was with you, that everything written about me in the law of Moses, in the Prophets, and the Psalms, had to come true."

LUKE 24

45 Then he opened their minds to an understanding of the Scripture. He showed them how all this had been written: that the Messiah had to suffer death and rise from the dead on the third  
46 day; that in his name all the nations had to be called to repentance  
47 for the forgiveness of sins. "You must begin from Jerusalem,"  
48 he said. "For you are the witnesses of these things. I am sending  
49 you very soon what my Father has promised; therefore remain  
here in the city until you are equipped with power from on high."

*Lifting their hearts to heaven, they turned back home*

50 Jesus brought them out as far as Bethany, and raising his hands,  
51 he blessed them and as he blessed them he was taken from them.  
52 They returned to Jerusalem in great joy and spent all their time  
in the temple giving thanks to God.

JOHN'S  
ACCOUNT



*That light is present and that distant time  
Is always here, continually redeemed*

In the beginning the Word already was,  
The Word was with God;  
the Word was himself God.  
From eternity the Word was with God.  
Through him all things came to be;  
without him nothing whatever came to be.  
All that exists had life in him,  
and the life was the light of men.  
**The light shines in the darkness,**  
and the darkness did not overcome it.

*An echo and a light unto eternity*

There came a man, sent by God, whose name was John. He came as a witness, to give testimony to the light, so that through him all men should have faith.  
He himself was not the light; he was sent as a witness to the light.

*From fields of uncreated light*

There is one who enlightens every man born into the world; he was the true light.  
He was in the world, and through him the world came to be; yet the world did not recognize him.  
He came to his own realm: yet his own did not accept him.  
But to those who accepted him, who gave him their faith, he

JOHN I

13 gave the right to become children of God, who were born not by a natural birth, nor by human desire, nor by the will of man, but as children of God.

*And solves the riddle of the universe*

14 And the Word became flesh **and lived among us**; we saw his glory, the glory of the only Son from the Father, full of grace and truth.

*O world unknowable we know thee*

15 John cried out in testimony to him, "This is he, the one of whom I said, 'After me comes one who is greater than I, because he already existed before me.'"

16 For we have all received of his riches, and grace upon grace.

17 The law was given through Moses; grace and truth came with

18 Jesus Christ. No man has ever seen God; God's only Son, who lives in the intimacy of his Father, has alone made him know... .

*O world invisible we view thee*

19 Here now is the testimony of John, when the Jews sent priests and temple-servants from Jerusalem to ask him who he was.

20 He told them straight, without any reservation, "I am not the Messiah."

21 "Who are you, then?" they asked. "Are you Elia?"

"No."

"Are you the promised prophet?"

"No."

22 "Well who are you? We must give an answer to those who sent us? Who do you claim to be?"

23 And John replied, quoting the prophet Isaia, "I am the voice of him who cries in the wilderness, 'Make ready the way of the Lord.'"

24 Now the messengers from Jerusalem had a brief from the

25 Pharisees. "Why then do you baptize," they wanted to know, "if you are not the Messiah, nor Elia, nor the prophet?"

26 And he answered, "I baptize you with water. But there stands



JOHN I

among you a man whom you do not know, who comes after me, and I am not worthy to unfasten the straps of his shoes."

28 All this took place at Bethany, on the other side of the Jordan, where John was baptizing.

29 Next day John was looking on as Jesus approached him and he said, "Here is the lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world. This is the one of whom I said, 'After me comes one who is greater than I, because he already existed before me.' I too did not know him; and yet the reason I came baptizing with water was that he might be revealed to the people of Israel."

30 And John testified, "I have seen the Spirit descending from heaven like a dove and resting upon him. Even I did not know him; but he who sent me to baptize with water said to me, 'The man upon whom you see the Spirit come down to rest—he is the one who baptizes with the Holy Spirit.'

34 I have seen it with my own eyes; I therefore testify that this is the Son of God."

*Rise, clasp my hand and come*

35 Next day John was again standing with two of his disciples as Jesus was walking by. He looked towards him and said, "There is the lamb of God!"

37 The two disciples heard what he said and followed Jesus.

38 Jesus looked round and saw them following him. "What are you looking for?" he asked.

And they replied, "Master, where are you staying?"

39 "Come and see," he said.

So they went, and saw where he was staying, and spent the remainder of the day with him; it was about the tenth hour.

40 Andrew, the brother of Simon Peter, was one of the two who had been listening to John and had followed Jesus.

41 And the first thing Andrew did was to look for his brother Simon and tell him, "We have found the Messiah (that is, the Christ)."

42 He brought him to Jesus. And Jesus, looking at him, said, "You are Simon, the son of John; you shall be called Kephas" (that is, Peter, 'the Rock').

*Beholders of the promised dawn of truth*

Next day Jesus decided to go to Galilee. He met Philip and said 43 to him, "Follow me." Philip was from Bethsaida, the same town as Andrew and Peter.

Philip found Nathanael and told him, "We have found the man 45 foretold by the scriptures of Moses and the Prophets; he is Jesus, the son of Joseph, from Nazareth."

"From Nazareth!" said Nathanael. "Do you mean to say there's 46 something good from Nazareth?"

And Philip replied, "Come and see."

As Jesus saw Nathanael coming towards him, he said of him, 47 "Here is a true Israelite, a man in whom there is no deceit."

"How do you know me?" Nathanael said to him. 48

And Jesus replied, "Before Philip called you, I saw you under the fig-tree."

Nathanael answered, "Master, you are the Son of God; you are 49 the King of Israel!"

And to this Jesus replied, "So you have faith, now that I have 50 told you how I saw you under the fig-tree? You will see greater than this." And he added, "Believe me you will see heaven 51 opened and the angels of God ascending and descending upon the Son of Man."

*God is in the bits and pieces of Everyday*

On the third day there was a wedding-feast at Cana in Galilee. 2, 1

The mother of Jesus was at it, and Jesus and his disciples were 2 also invited.

The wine ran out, and his mother said to Jesus, "They are short 3 of wine."

He replied, "Mother, why ask me about it? My time has not 4 come yet."

And his mother said to the servants, "Do whatever he tells you." 5

Now the Jews have customs of ritual purification; so there were 6 six stone jars there, each of them holding some twenty or thirty gallons of water.

## JOHN 2

7 Jesus said to the servants, "Fill the jars with water." And they filled them to the brim.

8 "Draw a sample now," he said, "and bring it to the steward of the feast."

9 They did this. And when the steward tasted the water made into wine, having no idea himself where it came from—although the servants knew—he called over the bridegroom and said to him,

10 "The normal practice is to serve the good wine first and the less good later on, when the guests are drunk; but you have kept the good wine till now."

11 That was how Jesus inaugurated his miracles, at Cana in Galilee; he revealed his divine glory and his disciples believed in him.

*I have loved the beauty of thy House*

12 Subsequently he went down to Capharnaum along with his mother, his brothers, and his disciples, but stayed only a few days.

13 The Jewish pasch was approaching and he went up to Jerusalem.

14 He found in the temple sellers of cattle, sheep and pigeons, and

15 also money-changers at their desks. Jesus made a whip of cords and drove them out from the temple—sheep, cattle and all. He overturned the money-changers' desks and scattered their coins.

16 And he said to the pigeon-sellers, "Take away all these! You must not turn my Father's house into a market."

17 And his disciples recalled the words of Scripture: 'Zeal for your house shall consume me.'

18 The Jews therefore said to him, "What sign can you show us, to justify this action of yours?"

19 And he replied, "Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it again."

20 The Jews replied, "Forty-six years it took to build this temple. Are you going to raise it in three days?"

21 But the temple Jesus had in mind was that of his body.

22 Later on, when he had been raised from the dead, his disciples recalled these words; they believed in the Scripture and in the words he had spoken.

*Lord, thou hast searched me*

While he was in Jerusalem for the paschal feast many came to 23  
 have faith in him, when they saw the miracles he worked.  
 But Jesus did not trust himself to them; he saw through all men, 24  
 and had no need to be informed about any man. 25  
 He himself knew what was to be known about the human heart.

*To dream of new dimensions*

There was a man called Nicodemus who belonged to the 3, 1  
 Pharisee party and was a member of the supreme Council. He 2  
 came to him under cover of night and said, "Master, we know  
 that you must be a teacher from God; no one but a man of God  
 could work these miracles that you work."

And Jesus replied, "Believe me, no man can see the kingdom of 3  
 God unless he is born again."

"But how?" said Nicodemus. "How can a grown man be born 4  
 again? Surely he cannot return to his mother's womb and be  
 born a second time?"

And Jesus replied, "I tell you, no man can enter the kingdom 5  
 of God unless he is reborn of water and the Spirit.

Man's life is born of man; the life of the Spirit is born of Spirit. 6  
 You need not wonder at my saying, 'You must all be born again'. 7  
 The wind, for instance, comes and goes at will, and you can hear 8  
 its sound; but you do not know where it comes from or where  
 it goes. And that is the way with everyone who is born of the  
 Spirit."

"But how can this be?" asked Nicodemus. 9  
 And Jesus replied, "You are a teacher in Israel. Surely you must 10

know this? Believe me, we speak what we know, and we testify 11  
 to what we have seen, but you do not accept our testimony. If 12  
 your faith falls short when I tell of the things of earth, how can  
 you have faith when I tell of the things of heaven? And no man 13  
 ascends to heaven, except the one who came down from heaven,  
 the Son of Man.

The Son of Man must be lifted up, as Moses lifted up the serpent 14  
 in the desert, so that everyone who has faith in him may have 15  
 eternal life.

*And at this moment I believe  
In love, and scout at death*

- 16 For God so loved the world that he sacrificed his only Son, so that everyone who has faith may not die but have eternal life.
- 17 God, indeed, did not send his Son into the world to judge the world, but to save the world.
- 18 When a man has faith in him, he is not judged; but the man who refuses him faith is already judged, because he has refused faith in God's only Son.

*Weep for the lives your wishes never led*

- 19 And the judgement is this, that the light has come into the world **and men have preferred the dark to the light**, because their deeds
- 20 were evil. For all those who do evil hate the light and shun it,
- 21 lest their deeds be shown up. But whoever follows truth comes into the light, so that his deeds may be revealed as having been done in God."

*You are so great, and I so small,  
I am nothing, you are all*

- 22 Having afterwards moved with his disciples to the country of Judaea Jesus went about with them there and was baptizing.
- 23 And John too was baptizing at Aenon, near Salim, because there
- 24 was plenty of water in the area. People were coming to him and being baptized; for John had not yet been put in prison.
- 25 Then there was an argument about purification between some
- 26 of John's disciples and a Jew. And they came to John and told him, "Master, that man who was with you beyond the Jordan, for whom you have testified, is now baptizing himself and all the people are flocking to him."
- 27 John answered, "A man cannot receive a grace unless it be given
- 28 him by God. You yourselves are witnesses to what I said: 'I am not the Messiah; I have been sent to prepare for him.'
- 29 Only the bridegroom can claim the bride; but the bridegroom's friend stands by, and hears him, and is gladdened by his voice.





My hour of joy has therefore come; he must increase more and 30 more, and I must grow less. The man who comes from above 31 stands above all; but the man of the earth belongs to the earth, and his words do not exceed the earth. He who comes from heaven stands above all, and testifies to what he has seen and 32 heard; and no one accepts his testimony. To accept his testimony 33 is to endorse that God is true. For the man whom God has sent 34 speaks the words of God, since God does not give the Spirit by measure; the Father loves the Son and has entrusted all things 35 to him.

Any man who has faith in the Son already possesses eternal life; 36 but whoever refuses faith in the Son will not see life. God's anger rests upon him."

*His weakness, my triumph*

Now the Pharisees had heard that Jesus was receiving and baptiz- 4, 1 ing more disciples than John, although it was not Jesus himself 2 who baptized but his disciples. So when the Lord got to know 3 this he left Judaea and returned to Galilee. To get there he had 4 to travel through Samaria; and he came to a Samaritan town 5 called Sychar, close to the piece of ground which Jacob had given to his son Joseph.

Jacob's well was there. And Jesus, being tired after the journey, 6 sat down by the well; it was about midday.

His disciples had gone into the town to buy food. So when a 7 woman of Samaria came to draw water Jesus said to her, "Give me a drink."

Now the Jews and the Samaritans do not get on together; the 9 woman therefore said to him, "How can you ask a drink of me, since you are a Jew and I am a woman of Samaria?"

*As the hart panteth after the water brooks*

Jesus replied, "If only you knew the gift of God, or the one who 10 is asking you for a drink, you would have asked him and he would have given you living water."

"Sir," she said, "you have no bucket, and this well is deep; 11 where do you get the living water? Are you greater than our 12

## JOHN 4

father, Jacob, who gave us this well and used it for himself and his children and flocks?"

- 13 Jesus replied, "**Everyone who drinks of this water will be thirsty again;** but the person who drinks of the water that I shall give him will never be thirsty. The water that I shall give him will become a spring of water welling up to eternal life within him."
- 14 The woman said to him, "Sir, give me this water! Then I shall not be thirsty again, or have to come here to draw."

*When the whirl of circumstance is past*

- 16 "Go home," he said to her. "Call your husband and come back here."
- 17 "I have no husband," the woman replied.
- 18 And Jesus said, "How true indeed that you have no husband! You have had five husbands, and the man you now live with is not your husband. What you have said is true."
- 19 The woman answered him, "Sir, I see that you are a prophet.
- 20 Our fathers worshipped God on this mountain; but you Jews say that Jerusalem is the place where God must be worshipped."

*The Lord is in his holy temple, the Lord's throne is in heaven*

- 21 Jesus said to her, "Woman, believe me, the day is coming when you will worship the Father neither on this mountain nor in Jerusalem. You worship in ignorance, we worship in knowledge;
- 22 for salvation belongs to the Jewish people. But the hour is coming —is already here—when those who are true worshippers will worship the Father in spirit and in truth. For that is how the
- 24 Father wants men to worship him. God is spirit; those who worship him must worship in spirit and in truth."
- 25 The woman replied to him, "I know that the Messiah (or the Christ) is coming. He will tell us all things."
- 26 And Jesus said to her, "I am he, who am speaking to you."

*What if this friend happens to be—God?*

- 27 At this point his disciples arrived. They were surprised to find him talking with a woman; but none of them asked what he was looking for or talking about.





So the woman left her water-jar behind and went back to the 28 town.

She said to the people, "Come and see a man who has revealed 29 to me my whole past. Do you think he could be the Messiah?"  
And they came out to him from the town. 30

*The seed ye sow another reaps*

Meanwhile his disciples were urging him, "Master, take some 31 food."

But he said, "**I have food to eat of which you know nothing.**" 32

"Has someone brought him food?" they began to wonder. 33

And Jesus replied, "My food is to do the will of him who sent 34 me, to complete his work. You say, do you not, 'No harvest without waiting for it'? But look, I tell you, lift up your eyes and look on the fields around; they are already golden, ready 35 for the harvest.

Already the reaper is being rewarded and gathering in harvest 36 for eternal life, so that sower and reaper can both rejoice together.

In this respect the proverb is true, that one sows and another 37 reaps. I have sent you to reap where you have not laboured; 38 others have laboured, and you have come in for the fruit of their labour."

*Move then with new desires*

Many of the Samaritans in the town began to have faith in him, 39 on the word of the woman's testimony that he had revealed her whole past; so when they came to him, they asked him to stay. 40

He stayed for two days. And many others put faith in him because 41 of his own word. They said to the woman, "Our faith no longer 42 rests on what you say; we have heard him ourselves and we know that this man is indeed the Saviour of the world."

*Yet nothing is impossible, nothing  
To men of faith and conviction*

After the two days he set out from there for Galilee; for Jesus 43

himself had testified that a prophet is unhonoured in his own country.

45 So when he arrived in Galilee the people gave him a reception; for they too had gone up to the festival and had seen all that he had done in Jerusalem.

46 He came again to Cana in Galilee, where he had made the water

47 into wine. And a certain royal officer had a son who lay ill at Capharnaum. When he heard that Jesus had arrived from Judaea, he went to him and asked him to go down and heal his son, who was dying.

48 Jesus said to him, "Unless you see signs and portents you will not have faith."

49 But the officer said, "Sir, please go down before my boy dies."

50 And Jesus replied, "Go home. Your son will live." The man believed what Jesus had said and set out for home.

51 And while he was on his way his servants came to meet him,

52 with news that his son was going to live. He asked what time he had got better and was told that the fever had left him at one

53 o'clock on the previous day. And the father knew that this was the moment when Jesus had said to him, "Your son will live." So he and all his household had faith.

54 This second miracle Jesus worked on his return from Judaea to Galilee.

*Even though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death*

5, 1 After this there was a Jewish feast and Jesus went up to

2 Jerusalem. There is a pool with five porticoes near the sheep-gate

3 in Jerusalem, which is called Bethzatha in Hebrew; in the

porticoes there used lie a large number of suffering people:

5 blind, lame, paralysed. Among them was a man who had been

6 ill for thirty-eight years. Jesus saw him lying there and knew

that he had been ill for a long time. "Would you like to be made

well?" he asked him.

7 And the sick man replied, "Sir, **I have no one** to let me down into

the pool whenever the water is stirred; while I am on my way

someone else gets there before me."

8 Jesus said to him, "Stand up! Take your bed and walk."



## JOHN 5

9 The man immediately became strong and well; he picked up his bed and walked away.

*I need the living heart, the holy knowledge.*

Now this day happened to be a sabbath.

10 The Jews therefore said to the man who had been healed, "It's the sabbath. You are not allowed to carry your bed."

11 "But I was told to," he replied. "The man who cured me said, 'Take your bed and walk.' "

12 And they asked him, "Who is this man who told you to take your bed and walk?"

13 But the cured man did not know. There was a crowd in the place and Jesus had slipped away.

14 Later Jesus found him in the temple and said to him, "Now that you have been made well, take care not to sin again, lest something worse should happen to you."

15 Then the man went off and told the Jews that it was Jesus who had cured him.

*Full of tumultuous life and great repose*

16 The Jews therefore began to persecute Jesus because he did these works on the sabbath.

17 He replied, "Even at this moment my Father is working, and I also work."

18 But their desire to kill him was only whetted. Not only did he break the sabbath; he also called God his Father, and so made himself equal to God.

*The chain of God's silence  
Held in his hand*

19 Jesus therefore said to them in reply, "The Son, I tell you, can do nothing on his own account; he does only what he sees the Father doing. Whatever the Father does, the Son also does. For the Father loves the Son and shows him all his works; and he will show him even greater works than these, so as to make you

wonder. Just as the Father raises the dead and makes them live, 21 so too the Son gives life as he wills, and to whom he wills.

Nor does the Father judge anyone; he has given all right of 22 judgement to the Son, that all may honour the Son as they 23 honour the Father. Whoever refuses honour to the Son refuses honour to the Father who sent him.

I tell you, the man who hears my word and believes in him who 24 sent me has eternal life; he does not come to judgement, but has already passed from death to life.

Indeed, the hour is coming—it is already here—when the dead 25 will hear the voice of the Son of Man, and all who hear it will live.

As the Father has life in himself, so too the Son has life in himself by the Father's gift. And he has given him the right to 27 execute judgement, because he is the Son of Man.

You should not wonder at this. For a day will come when all 28 who are in their graves will hear his voice, when those who have 29 done good will come out to a resurrection of life, and those who have done evil to a resurrection of judgement.

*In that last while, eternity's confine  
I came to love, I came into my own*

I can never act on my own; as I hear, so I judge. And my judgement is just, because I do not seek my own interest but that of him who sent me.

If I were to testify on my own behalf, my testimony would not 31 be true. But there is another who testifies to me, and I know that 32 his testimony is true.

You yourselves sent delegates to John; and John has given his 33 testimony to the truth. Not that human testimony is adequate 34 in my case, but I say this that you may be saved.

John was a lamp, burning for all to see; and for a while you were 35 glad to rejoice in his light.

But I have a testimony greater than that of John: the very works 36 that the Father gave me to achieve, the very works that I do, these are my testimony that the Father has sent me. And the 37 Father who sent me has also borne testimony to me. But you have neither heard his voice nor seen his face; and you do not 38

have his word rooted in your hearts, since you do not believe in the one whom he sent.

39 **You study the Scriptures**, in the view that they are for you a means to eternal life; in effect, they bear testimony to me, and 40 yet you are not willing to come to me that you may have life. 41 I do not look to men for glory; but apart from that I know you—that you have no love in you for God. 43 I have come on the authority of my Father and you do not accept me; but if another comes on his own authority him you will accept. 44 How can you have faith in me, since you look to one another for 45 glory and do not look for the glory that is from God alone? You need not think therefore that I shall be your accuser before the Father; your accuser will be Moses, the one in whom you have 46 placed your hope. For if you had faith in Moses, you would also 47 have faith in me, since I am the one he wrote about. But if you do not believe his writings, how are you to believe my words?"

*I am Hunger*

6, 1 Afterwards Jesus crossed to the other side of the lake of Galilee, or Tiberias. 2 A large crowd of people followed him, for they had seen the miracles he worked for the sick. 3 So he went up the hill-side and sat there with his disciples; and the Jewish festival of the pasch was drawing near.

*He shall feed his flock like a shepherd*

5 On looking around and seeing how large was the multitude flocking towards him, Jesus said to Philip, "Where can we buy bread to feed these people?" 6 Now he really said this to test him; for he knew himself what he was going to do. 7 Philip replied, "A day's wages for two hundred men would not be enough to supply each with a little." 8 Then one of his disciples, Andrew the brother of Simon Peter, 9 said to him, "There is a boy here who has five barley loaves and two fish; but what is that for a crowd like this?" 10 Jesus said, "Get the people to sit down."





There was plenty of grass in the area; so the men sat down—some five thousand in number.

Jesus took the loaves in his hands and gave thanks. He passed 11 them to the people as they were sitting on the ground; and the same again with the fish, as much as they wanted.

Then, when all had eaten their fill, he said to his disciples, 12 “Gather up what is left over, so that nothing is lost.”

This they did, and filled twelve baskets with the fragments of 13 barley loaves left uneaten by the people.

*The haunted labyrinth of the heart*

When the people realized what a miracle he had worked they 14 exclaimed, “Surely this is the prophet who was to come into the world!”

But Jesus knew that they would come to seize him and make 15 him king; he therefore withdrew alone into the hills.

*The race is not to the swift  
Nor the battle to the strong*

Late in the evening his disciples went down to the lake, embarked 16 in the boat, and began to head for Capharnaum on the other side. Darkness had already come down and Jesus had not yet come to them.

A strong wind was blowing and the lake was getting rough. And 18 when they had rowed some three or four miles they saw Jesus walking on the lake, approaching the boat. They were terrified.

But he called out to them, “**It is I. Do not be afraid.**” 20

And when they set about taking him into the boat, the boat landed at the place they were heading for. 21

*The eye is not satisfied with seeing  
Nor the ear filled with hearing*

Next day the people stood on the opposite shore of the lake. They 22 saw that only one boat had been on the other side, and that Jesus had not embarked in it with his disciples, that these had gone away without him. Meanwhile other boats had come from 23

## JOHN 6

Tiberias to the vicinity where they had eaten, on the occasion  
24 when the Lord gave thanks. And when the people found that  
Jesus was not there, nor his disciples, they got into these boats  
25 and made the crossing to Capharnaum, looking for him. Finding  
him now on the other side, they asked, "Master, when did you  
get here?"  
26 Jesus replied, "The truth is, I tell you, that you look for me not  
because you have seen signs but because you have eaten your fill  
27 of bread. **Your work should not be for the bread that perishes**,  
but for that which remains to eternal life, which the Son of Man  
will give you; for it is upon him that the Father has set his seal."  
28 They asked, "What must we do if we are to work the works of  
God?"  
29 And Jesus replied, "To do the work of God you must have faith  
in the one whom he sent."

*Without expression, waiting for a sign*

30 "What do you do, then, as a sign?" they said to him. "What are  
you going to accomplish? Let's see it, if we are to believe in you!"  
31 Our fathers ate manna in the desert; we read in Scripture that  
'he gave them bread from heaven to eat.'"  
32 Jesus replied, "Believe me, Moses did not give you bread from  
heaven; it is my Father who gives you the true bread from  
33 heaven. The bread of God is he who comes down from heaven  
and gives life to the world."  
34 And they said to him, "Sir, give us this bread at all times."  
35 "I am the bread of life," Jesus replied. "Whoever comes to me  
will never go hungry; whoever believes in me will never suffer  
36 thirst. But as I have told you, while your eyes have seen, never-  
theless you do not have faith."

*He who Joy of Life would store  
Heart of his be widely open*

37 Everyone whom the Father gives me will come to me; and the  
38 one who comes to me I will not reject. For I have not come down  
from heaven to do my own will, but the will of him who sent me.  
39 And the will of the Father who sent me is this, that of all whom



## JOHN 6

he has given me I should not lose any, but should raise them up on the last day.

40 The will of my Father is this, that everyone who looks to the Son and has faith in him shall have eternal life; and I will raise him up on the last day."

*And, seeing, know; and, knowing, be at ease*

41 The Jews began to protest over his saying to them, 'I am the bread which came down from heaven.' "Surely this is Jesus, the son of Joseph?" they said. "Don't we know his father and mother? What's this talk about coming down from heaven?"

43 And Jesus replied, "Stop this murmuring! No man can come to me, unless he is drawn by the Father who sent me; and I will raise him up on the last day.

45 It is written in the prophets, 'They shall all be taught by God.' Therefore everyone who has listened to the Father, and learned from him, comes to me.

46 Not that anyone has ever seen the Father—apart from the one who is from God; he alone has seen the Father.

47 Believe me, whoever has faith already has eternal life.

*Taste and see that the Lord is sweet*

48 I am the bread of life. Your fathers ate manna in the desert, but 50 nevertheless they died; this is the bread which comes down from heaven, so that those who eat it may not die.

51 I am the living bread which has come down from heaven; any man who eats this bread shall live for ever. And the bread which I will give is my own flesh—for the life of the world."

*The Body of our Lord—take and eat this*

52 The Jews then began to debate furiously among themselves, "How can this man give us his flesh to eat?"

53 And Jesus replied, "I tell you the truth, unless you eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink his blood, you have no life in you.

54 The one who eats my flesh and drinks my blood has eternal life, and I will raise him up on the last day.

My flesh is real food; my blood is real drink. He who eats my 55 flesh and drinks my blood lives in me, and I live in him. As the living Father has sent me, and I live by the Father, so 57 too any man who eats me will live by me. This is the bread which 58 has come down from heaven—not like that which your fathers ate, for they died; the man who eats this bread will live for ever."

This was the doctrine taught by Jesus in the synagogue at 59 Capharnaum.

*To the last point of vision and beyond*

Having heard it many of his disciples said, "This teaching is 60 unreasonable. Who can accept it?"

But Jesus, knowing in his own mind that his disciples were 61 muttering about it, said to them, "Does my teaching give you offence? Suppose then you were to see the Son of Man ascending 62 to where he was before? The spirit alone gives life—not the 63 flesh, which can do nothing. The words that I have spoken to you are both spirit and life.

But there are some among you who do not have faith." 64 For Jesus knew all along who were the ones who did not have 65 faith, and who was going to betray him. "This is why I said to you," he added, "that no one can come to me unless the grace is given him by the Father."

Following on this many of his disciples withdrew from him and 66 refused to go with him any more.

*Whither thou goest, I will go*

Jesus therefore said to the Twelve, "Do you also want to go?" 67 And Simon Peter answered, "Lord, to whom shall we go? You 68 have the words of eternal life; we have faith and have therefore 69 come to know that you are the Holy One of God."

*For know, there are two worlds of life and death*

Jesus replied, "Have I not chosen you Twelve? Yet one of you 70 is a devil."

He meant Judas, the son of Simon Iscariot. 71

He it was, one of the Twelve, who would later betray him.

*A time to every purpose under heaven*

7, 1 Afterwards Jesus went about in Galilee, not wanting to show himself in Judaea since the Jews were bent on killing him.  
2 But as the Jewish feast of the Tabernacles drew near, his brothers said to him, "Leave this country and go up to Judaea;  
4 let your disciples there see these works of yours. No man does things in secret, if he wants to be in the public eye. So if you do works like these, show yourself to the world."  
5 For not even his brothers had faith in him.  
6 Jesus said to them, "My time has not come yet, but your time  
7 is always ready. The world cannot hate you, but it hates me, because I testify against it and the evil of its works.  
8 Go up you to the feast. I am not going up to this one, because my time has not come for me yet."  
9 And having given this answer he stayed behind in Galilee.  
10 However, when his brothers had gone up to the feast, then he went up himself—not openly, but in secret.  
  
11 The Jews were looking for him at the feast. "Where is this man?"  
12 they were asking. And among the crowd many different opinions were being whispered about him. Some said, "He is a good man." Others, "No, he is leading the people astray."  
13 But no one spoke openly about him, for fear of the Jews.

*Only love can redeem*

14 On the fourth day of the festival week Jesus went up to the temple and began teaching there.  
15 At this the Jews began to wonder. "This man has never been a student of the law," they said. "How does he know the Scriptures?"  
16 He replied, "The teaching I give does not come from me but  
17 from him who sent me. Anyone who is prepared to do his will will know whether my teaching comes from God or whether I  
18 speak on my own account. Whoever speaks on his own account is out for his own glory. But the man who seeks glory for the one who sent him is true; there is no falsehood in him.

Did not Moses give you the law? And yet none of you obeys it. 19  
Why are you trying to kill me?"

The people answered, "You are mad! Who is trying to kill 20  
you?"

Jesus replied, "One work I have done on the sabbath and you 21  
are all wondering. But because Moses gave you circumcision— 22  
although it really came from the patriarchs and not from Moses—  
you therefore circumcise a man even on the sabbath. If circum- 23  
cision is carried out on the sabbath, lest the law of Moses be  
broken, are you angry with me for giving health to a whole man  
on the sabbath?"

Let your judgement be just—not superficial!"

24

*But if you want me, if you need me,  
Who waits at the terrible door but I?*

Some of the people were saying, "Isn't this the one they want 25  
to kill? Yet here he is speaking openly and no one says a word 26  
to him. Can it be that even the rulers have decided that this is  
in fact the Messiah?"

But we know well where this man is from, whereas the origin 27  
of the Messiah when he comes is completely unknown."

Jesus therefore raised his voice as he was teaching in the temple 28  
and said, "So you know me! And you know where I am from!  
But I have not come on my own account, I have been sent by 29  
one who is true, whom you do not know. I know him, because  
I am from him; he sent me."

They wanted therefore to arrest him; but no one laid hands on 30  
him because his hour had not yet come. Nevertheless, there were 31  
many among the people who put faith in him. "When the Messiah  
comes," they said, "will he work more miracles than this man?"

Now the Pharisees heard these mutterings about him among 32  
the people. So the chief priests and the Pharisees sent agents  
to arrest him.

Jesus therefore said, "For yet a short while I am with you, and 33  
then I go to him who sent me. You will look for me, but you will 34  
not find me; and where I am, you cannot come."

The Jews therefore said to one another, "Where can he be going 35  
that we shall not be able to find him? Does he intend to go to

36 the exiles of the Greek world and teach the Greeks? Or what does he mean by saying, 'You will look for me, but you will not find me' and 'Where I am, you cannot come'?"

*There is a river whose streams make glad the city of God*

37 On the last and most important day of the festival Jesus stood up and cried aloud, "If anyone is thirsty let him come to me and drink; from the one who believes in me, as the Scripture says, **streams of living water will flow.**"

38 He was speaking of the Spirit later to be received by those who had faith in him; as yet the Spirit had not been given, because Jesus had not yet been glorified.

*Where there is no vision the people perish*

40 There were many among the crowd who, when they heard these words, began to say, "This is indeed the Prophet," or again, "He is the Messiah."

41 But others replied, "Can it be that the Messiah comes from 42 Galilee? Hasn't Scripture made it clear that the Messiah comes of the family of David and from Bethlehem, the town where David lived?"

43 The people, therefore, were divided in their views about him.

44 Many would have liked to arrest him.  
But no one laid hands on him.

45 When the agents returned to the chief priests and the Pharisees they were asked, "Why have you not brought him?"

46 And they replied, "Never has a man spoken as this man speaks."

47 The Pharisees said, "Have you too been taken in? Has any of 49 the rulers or the Pharisees believed in this man? As for this people, they are blighted by their ignorance of the law!"

50 But one of their party, Nicodemus, who had formerly had a 51 meeting with Jesus, asked them, "Does our law judge a man without first giving him a hearing and finding out what he has done?"

52 And they replied, "Are you too from Galilee? Search the Scriptures and see for yourself that no prophet comes from Galilee!"





*Thou, O Christ, art all I want  
Raise the fallen, cheer the faint*

[They all went away to their homes, and Jesus went out to the 8, 1  
Mount of Olives. At daybreak he came again to the temple, and 2  
the people flocked to him. He had seated himself and was teach- 3  
ing them when the doctors of the law and the Pharisees brought  
him a woman who had been caught in adultery. They led her out 4  
in front of everybody, and said to him, "Master, this woman has  
been caught committing adultery. Now Moses laid it down in the 5  
law that such women should be stoned. What do you think?"  
They said this to test him, so as to be able to accuse him. 6  
Jesus however leant forward, and began writing with his finger  
on the ground.

And as they kept pressing with their question, he straightened 7  
up and said, "**Whichever of you is without sin let him cast the  
first stone.**"

Then he leant forward again and continued writing on the 8  
ground.

And one after another his audience began to leave, starting from 9  
the eldest.

At the end Jesus alone remained, with the woman standing be- 10  
fore him. So he straightened up once more and said to her,  
"Woman, where are they? Has none of them condemned you?"  
She replied, "No one, sir." 11  
And Jesus said, "Neither will I condemn you. Go home and sin  
no more."]

*The light we sought is shining still*

Jesus, therefore, spoke to them again and said, "I am the light 12  
of the world. Any person who follows me will never walk in  
darkness but will have the light of life."

*But if once we lose this light*

The Pharisees said to him, "Since you are a witness in your own 13  
cause, your testimony is not valid."

Jesus replied, "Granted that I am a witness in my own cause, 14

## JOHN 8

my testimony is nonetheless valid; for I know where I have come from and where I am going, whereas you do not know.

15 You judge by human standards, but I judge no man. And if I do judge, my judgement is true; for it is not I alone who judge but I and he who sent me.

17 It stands written in your law that when two witnesses are in agreement their testimony is true.

18 I am a witness for myself; and the Father who sent me is another witness for me.”

19 “Where is your Father?” they asked.  
And Jesus replied, “You know neither me nor my Father; if you knew me, you would also know my Father.”

20 These words he spoke as he taught in the temple, near the treasury.  
But no one arrested him, because his hour had not yet come.

### *'Tis with us perpetual night*

21 He said to them again, “I am going away. You will look for me, but you will die in your sin; for where I go, you cannot come.”

22 The Jews therefore asked, “Is he going to kill himself? Is this what he means by saying, ‘Where I go you cannot come’?”

23 Jesus said to them, “You are from below; I am from above. You

24 are of this world; I am not of this world. That is why I told you that you will die in your sins; for if you will not believe that I am he, you will die in your sins.”

25 “Who are you?” they asked him.

26 And he replied: “Why do I speak to you at all? There are many things I have to say about you—and in judgement. But he who sent me is true; and what I speak to the world is what I have heard from him.”

27 They did not understand that he was speaking of the Father.

28 And Jesus said, “When you have lifted up the Son of Man, then you will know that I am he and that I do nothing on my own

29 account but speak only what the Father has told me. He who sent me is with me and has not left me alone; I do always what pleases him.”

30 And as he said this, many came to have faith in him.

*For truth only is living  
Truth only is whole*

To the Jews who had faith in him, Jesus said, "Take my word <sup>31</sup> to heart and you are truly disciples of mine; you will know the <sup>32</sup> truth and the truth will make you free."

They answered, "We are descended from Abraham and have <sup>33</sup> never been slaves to any man; what do you mean by saying, 'You will be free'?"

Jesus replied, "Believe me, anyone who commits sin is a slave <sup>34</sup> of sin, and no slave can claim to belong for ever to the house. <sup>35</sup> Only the son of the house belongs to it for ever; therefore if the <sup>36</sup> Son gives you freedom, you will really be free."

*And query, what does this vaingloriousness down here?*

I know that you are descended from Abraham. Nevertheless you <sup>37</sup> are bent on killing me, because my word does not go home to you. What I have seen in my Father's presence, that is what I <sup>38</sup> speak; what you have learned from your father, that is what you do."

They replied, "Abraham is our father." <sup>39</sup>

And Jesus said, "If you are children of Abraham, follow the example of Abraham.

As it is, you are bent on killing me, a man who have told you <sup>40</sup> the truth I have heard from God. This is not what Abraham did. The example you follow is that of your own father." <sup>41</sup>

"We are not children born of infidelity," they said to him. "God is our father—and God alone."

And Jesus replied, "If God were your father, you would love <sup>42</sup> me, for I am here because I have come from God. I have not come on my own account; it was he who sent me.

Why do you not understand my teaching? Because your minds <sup>43</sup> are closed to my word.

You belong to your father, the devil, and the desires of your <sup>44</sup> father you choose to carry out. From the beginning he was a destroyer of men; he has not stood in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaks a lie, he speaks in character; for he is a liar, and the father of lies.

*Before Abraham was— I am*

45 But I speak the truth, and therefore you refuse to believe me.  
46 Can any of you prove wrong against me? And if I speak the truth, why do you refuse to believe?  
47 Anyone who has God for father accepts the words of God; and if you do not accept them, it is because you do not have God as your father.”  
48 The Jews answered him, “Are we not right in saying that you are a foreign heretic and possessed by a demon?”  
49 Jesus replied, “On the contrary—far from being possessed—I honour my Father, whereas you dishonour me. I am not seeking glory for myself; there is another who seeks it—and judges.  
51 Believe me, anyone who is faithful to my word shall never see death.”  
52 The Jews therefore said to him, “Now we know for sure that you are possessed. Abraham and the prophets are all dead; but you say, ‘Anyone who is faithful to my word shall never taste death.’ Are you greater than our father Abraham, who died? Or the prophets, who also died? Who do you think you are?”  
54 Jesus answered, “If self-glory were my ambition, my glory would be worthless. But it is my Father who glorifies me. While you claim that he is your God, you have never known him. But I know him. And if I were to say I did not know him, I should be a liar like you.  
I know him, and I am faithful to his word.

*From eternity to eternity—I am*

56 Your father Abraham rejoiced that he should see my day; he saw it, and was glad.”  
57 The Jews answered, “You are not yet fifty! Have you seen Abraham?”  
58 And he replied, “Believe me, before Abraham was born, I am.”  
59 They picked up stones to stone him.  
But Jesus was hidden from them and left the temple.

*And see, no longer blinded by our eyes*

9, 1 As he was walking along, he saw a man who had been born

blind. And his disciples asked him, "Master, why was this man 2 born blind? Was it he himself who sinned, or was it his parents?" Jesus answered them, "There was no sin, either on his part or 3 that of his parents; he is blind because the works of God were to be revealed in him. So long as it is day we must do the work 4 of him who sent me; the night is coming, when no man can work. While I am in the world, I am the light of the world." 5 Having said this, he spat on the ground and made a paste of the 6 spittle. He put the paste on the man's eyes and said to him, "Go 7 and wash in the pool of Siloam." (The word is interpreted 'Sent'.) And the man went off and washed and came back with his sight restored.

*His lone might 'gainst all darkness opposing*

His neighbours and those who had known him before as a beggar 8 began to wonder, "Isn't this the one who used to sit begging?" Some said, "Yes, it is." Others thought, "No, it's someone like 9 him."

But he himself said, "I am the man." "How did you get your sight back?" they asked. 10 And he replied, "The man called Jesus made a paste, smeared 11 it on my eyes and said to me, 'Go to Siloam and wash.' So I went, and washed, and now I can see."

They asked him, "Where is this man?" 12 And he replied, "I don't know."

So they brought the man who had been blind to the Pharisees; 13 the day on which Jesus made the clay paste and restored the 14 man's sight was a sabbath.

The Pharisees, therefore, asked him again how he had got his 15 sight back.

And the man replied, 'He put clay on my eyes; then I washed, and now I see.'

Some of them said, "Surely this man can't be from God, since 16 he doesn't keep the sabbath!"

"But how can miracles like these be the work of a sinner?" others asked. So they were divided.

They turned therefore to the blind man and said to him, 17

## JOHN 9

“What do you think, seeing that it was your eyes he opened?”  
He replied, “He is a prophet.”

- 18 The Jews therefore refused to believe he had been blind and had
- 19 got back his sight, until they summoned his parents and asked them, “Is this your son? Do you say that he was born blind? And how is it that he can now see?”
- 20 The man’s parents replied, “Yes, he’s our son all right, and we
- 21 know that he was born blind. But how he got his sight back or who opened his eyes we have no idea. Ask himself! He’s of age; let him speak for himself.”
- 22 The parents gave this answer because they were afraid of the Jews. For the Jews had already agreed that anyone who acknowledged Jesus as the Messiah should be banned from the synagogue.
- 23 That was why his parents said, “He is of age; ask himself.”

*What place shall open to Him? Shall the day,  
Shall darkness, to His urgency give heed?*

- 24 For a second time therefore they called the man who had been blind and said to him, “Tell the truth before God! We know that this fellow is a sinner.”
- 25 He answered, “Whether he is a sinner or not, I don’t know. But I know one thing: I was blind and now I can see.”
- 26 “What did he do to you?” they asked. “How did he restore your sight?”
- 27 And he replied, “I have told you already and you wouldn’t listen. Why do you want it repeated? Are you thinking of becoming his disciples?”
- 28 At this they abused him roundly and said to him, “Disciples of
- 29 his? You may be one! We are disciples of Moses. We know that God’s revelation was to Moses; but who this fellow is, or where he is from, we do not know.”
- 30 The man answered them, “Now this is strange indeed! Here’s a man who opened my eyes, and you don’t know where he’s
- 31 from! We all know that God does not listen to sinners; he listens
- 32 to the one who respects and obeys him. Who ever heard of a
- 33 man opening the eyes of a person born blind? If this man were not from God, he could do nothing.”

And they replied, "You were bred and born in sin; how dare you 34  
teach us!"

And they threw him out.

Jesus heard that he had been thrown out; when he found him 35  
he said to him, "Do you believe in the Son of Man?"

"Who is he, sir," the man asked, "that I may believe in him?" 36  
And Jesus answered, "You have seen him; it is he who speaks 37  
to you."

The man flung himself at his feet, and confessed, "I believe, 38  
Lord."

And Jesus said, "For judgement have I come into the world: 39  
that those who are blind should see, and that those who see  
should become blind."

Some Pharisees in the company heard these words, and asked, 40  
"Are we too blind?"

And Jesus replied, "If you were really blind you would have no 41  
sin; now that you say 'we see', your sin remains."

*The Lord is my shepherd*

"Believe me, any man who does not enter the sheep-fold by 10, 1  
the door but climbs in somewhere else is a thief and a robber;  
he who enters by the door is the shepherd of the sheep. To him 2  
the door-keeper opens; he is the one whose voice the sheep obey,  
as he calls his own by name and leads them out. And when he 4  
has brought them all out, he goes ahead of them; and his sheep  
follow him, because they know his voice.

They will not follow a stranger, but will run away from him, 5  
because they do not recognize the voice of strangers."

Jesus told them this parable; but they did not understand what 6  
he meant by it.

*The Lord shall preserve thy going out and thy coming in*

Jesus therefore said to them again, "Believe me, I am the door 7  
of the sheep. All who came before me were thieves and robbers, 8  
but the sheep would not listen to them. I am the door; any man 9

who enters by me will be saved. **He will go in, and go out, and will find pasture.** The thief comes only to steal and kill and destroy; I have come that they may have life in all its fulness.

*Except for love's sake only*

- 11 I am the good shepherd; the good shepherd gives his life for his sheep.
- 12 The hired man, or any other stranger to whom the sheep do not belong, abandons the sheep and runs away as soon as he sees the
- 13 wolf coming, allowing the wolf to seize and scatter them. Since he only works for pay, he has no real interest in the sheep.
- 14 I am the good shepherd; I know my own and my own know me,
- 15 as the Father knows me and I know the Father. And I lay down my life for the sheep.
- 16 And I have other sheep that do not belong to this fold; these too I must lead. They will obey my voice; and there will be one flock and one shepherd.

*By your death I have lived*

- 17 If the Father loves me it is because I lay down my life, so as to take it up again. No one takes it from me; I lay it down of myself. I have the right to lay it down, and the right to take it up again, having received this commandment from my Father."
- 19 Once again his words caused division among the Jews.
- 20 Many said, "He is mad—possessed by a demon. Why listen to him?"
- 21 Others replied, "These are not the words of a man with a demon. Can a demon open the eyes of the blind?"
- 22 The feast of the temple dedication was being held at the time in
- 23 Jerusalem. It was winter. Jesus was in the temple, walking back and forth in Solomon's cloister.
- 24 The Jews therefore gathered round him and asked, "How long more are you going to keep us in suspense? Tell us straight, if you are the Messiah."



*Can I outleap the sea—  
The edge of all land, the final sea?*

25 Jesus answered, “I have told you, but you do not believe. The works that I do in my Father’s name, these are my testimony; 26 but you do not believe, because you are not sheep of my flock. 27 My sheep listen to my voice. I know them, and they follow me; 28 and I give them eternal life. They shall never perish, and no one shall snatch them from my hand. 29 My Father who gave them to me is greater than all; and no one can snatch them from the hand of the Father. 30 The Father and I are one.”

*Faith’s transcendent dower*

31 Once again the Jews picked up stones to stone him. 32 And Jesus said to them, “Many are the works that I have shown you from the Father, and all of them good; for which of these would you stone me?” 33 They answered, “It’s not for any good work that we would stone you, but for blasphemy; because you, a mere man, make yourself God.” 34 Jesus replied, “Does it not stand written in your law, ‘I said, 35 You are gods’? If the people to whom God’s word was spoken can be called ‘gods’ and the Scripture cannot be set aside, how 36 can you accuse me of blasphemy when I assert—I whom the Father consecrated and sent into the world—that ‘I am the Son of God’? 37 If the works that I do are not those of my Father, do not believe 38 in me; but if they are, at least believe in the works, even if you do not believe in me. Then you will know indeed that the Father is in me and I am in the Father.” 39 And again they wanted to seize him. But he escaped them.

*Struggling towards God*

40 He departed once more to the other side of the Jordan, where John had formerly been baptizing; here he stayed and many

came to him. "John worked no miracle," they said, "but every- 41  
thing John said about this man was true."

And many came to believe in him there. 42

*And death shall have no dominion*

A man called Lazarus fell ill; he was from Bethany, the village 11, 1  
where Mary lived, with her sister Martha: Mary was the one 2  
who anointed the Lord with an expensive perfume and wiped  
his feet with her hair; the one who had fallen ill was her brother  
Lazarus.

The sisters sent a message to him: "Please, Lord, your friend is 3  
ill."

And on hearing it Jesus said, "This illness is not going to end 4  
in death but is for the glory of God; through it the Son of God  
will be glorified."

Therefore, although Jesus was a dear friend of Martha and her 5  
sister and Lazarus, when he got news of the illness he stayed 6  
where he was for another two days.

Only then did he say to his disciples, "Let us go back to Judaea." 7  
"Master," they replied, "recently the Jews wanted to stone you. 8  
Are you going back already?"

He answered, "Are there not twelve hours of daylight? When a 9  
man walks in day-time he does not stumble, because he sees the  
light of this world; but he stumbles if he walks in the night 10  
because he has no light in him."

Having said this he added, "Lazarus our friend has fallen asleep; 11  
but I will go and wake him."

The disciples said, "Lord, if he has fallen asleep he will be all 12  
right."

But Jesus was speaking of his death. They thought he meant 13  
ordinary sleep.

Then he said openly, "Lazarus is dead. I am glad on your account 14  
that I was not there, so that you may have faith. Let us go to  
him."

Thomas, the one called the "Twin", said to his fellow-disciples, 15  
"Let us all go that we may die with him."

*In the faith that looks through death*

17 On arrival, Jesus found that Lazarus had been four days in the  
 18 grave. Bethany was near Jerusalem, only about two miles away,  
 19 and many of the Jews had come out to Martha and Mary to  
 console them over their brother's death.

20 Therefore as soon as she heard that Jesus was coming, Martha  
 went out to meet him, while Mary stayed at home.

21 And Martha said to Jesus, "If you had been here, Lord, my  
 22 brother would not have died. But I know that even now God will  
 give you anything you ask."

23 Jesus said to her, "Your brother will rise again."

24 "Yes, I know." Martha replied, "He will rise in the resurrection  
 of the last day."

25 And Jesus said, "**I am the resurrection and the life.** Any person  
 26 who has faith in me will live, even though he die; and no living  
 person who has faith in me will ever die. Do you believe this?"

27 "Yes, Lord," Martha replied, "I believe that you are the Messiah,  
 the Son of God, who was to come into the world."

*Bid me to live, and I will live*

28 Having said this Martha went home and quietly called for her  
 sister Mary. "The Master is here," she said. "He wants you."

29 So Mary on hearing it got ready in a hurry and went out to him.

30 For Jesus had not yet come into the village but was still at the  
 place where Martha had met him.

31 The Jews in the house with her, who were consoling her, when  
 they saw Mary get ready and hurry out, went out after her,  
 thinking that she was going to the grave to mourn there.

32 And Mary, when she came to where Jesus was, fell at his feet on  
 seeing him and said, "Lord, if you had been here, my brother  
 would not have died."

33 Jesus noticed her weeping, and the Jews who were with her  
 weeping. A feeling of anger came upon him and he was troubled.

34 "Where have you buried him?" he asked.  
 And they replied, "Lord, come and see."

35 Jesus wept.

36 And the Jews exclaimed, "How dearly he must have loved him!"



37 But some remarked, "He restored sight to the blind man, didn't he? Could he not have prevented this other from dying?"  
38 And Jesus again felt anger, as he arrived at the tomb. It was a cave and a stone lay against it.  
39 He told them to remove the stone. But the dead man's sister, Martha, said to him, "Lord, by now the body is decaying; this is the fourth day."  
40 Jesus replied, "Did I not tell you that if you had faith you would see the glory of God?"  
41 Then they took away the stone.  
Jesus raised his eyes and said, "Father, I thank you for hearing me. I know that you always hear me; but I say this on account of the people present here, that they may believe you have sent me."  
43 Having said this, he called in a loud voice, "Lazarus, come out!"  
44 And the dead man came out, his hands and feet bound in linen bands, and his face covered with a cloth.  
Jesus said to the people, "Release him and let him go home."

*Cursed be the social lies that warp us from the living truth*

45 Many of the Jews who had come to Mary, and had seen the miracle that Jesus worked, now believed in him.  
46 But some of them went to the Pharisees and reported his action.  
47 So the chief priests and the Pharisees assembled the Council and said to them, "Where are we getting? This man goes on working miracles. If we let him continue, everyone will believe in him. Then the Romans will come and take away our temple and our nation."  
49 But one of them, Caiphas, who was the high priest for that year,  
50 said to them, "You people have no sense! You don't use your heads. Your own interest demands that one man should die for the people, rather than that the whole nation should perish."  
51 Now Caiphas did not say this of himself; he was the high priest for that year, and therefore his words were a prophecy that Jesus  
52 was to die for the nation, and not only to die for the nation but also to gather into one all the scattered people of God.

*All this in the house of my friends*

53 From that day on they were resolved to kill him.

Jesus, therefore, no longer went about openly among the Jews; 54 he retired to a town called Ephraim on the edge of the desert and remained there with his disciples.

The Jewish pasch was approaching. Many people had gone up 55 to Jerusalem from the country, in time to purify themselves for the feast. All were looking for Jesus, asking one another, as they 56 stood in the temple, "What do you think? Is he not coming to the feast?" The chief priests and the Pharisees had issued orders 57 that anyone who knew where he was should let them know, so that they could arrest him.

*And, in her face, the whole earth's anguish prays*

Six days before the pasch Jesus came to Bethany, where Lazarus 12, 1 lived whom he had raised from the dead.

They gave a dinner for him; Martha did the serving and Lazarus 2 was one of the guests.

And Mary, taking a full pound of genuine and very costly perfume, anointed the feet of Jesus and wiped them dry with her hair. The whole house was filled with the scent of the perfume. One of his disciples, Judas Iscariot, the man who was to betray 4 him, remarked, "This perfume was worth a lot of money. Why 5 wasn't it sold, and the money given to the poor?"

He said this not because he was interested in the poor but because 6 he was a thief; for Judas was the bearer of the common purse and used pilfer the money put into it.

Jesus therefore said, "Leave her alone! Let her keep it for my 7 burial-day. You will always have the poor with you, but you will 8 not always have me."

*Cruelty has a human heart*

A large number of the Jews who had learned that he was at 9 Bethany came out there, not only to see Jesus but also to see Lazarus, whom he had raised from the dead.

And since, because of him, many Jews were being converted to 10 faith in Jesus, the chief priests decided to destroy Lazarus as well.

*Those holy fields  
Over whose acres walked those blessed feet*

12 Next day it came to the ears of the multitude who had come for  
 13 the feast that Jesus was about to enter Jerusalem. So they got  
 themselves palm-branches and went out to meet him. And they  
 shouted:  
 "Praise to God! Blessings on him who comes in the name of the  
 Lord, the King of Israel!"

14 Jesus had found a donkey and was riding it, for so it had been  
 written in Scripture:  
 15 'Fear not, daughter of Sion.  
 See! Your king is coming, riding a donkey-colt.'

16 At first his disciples did not see the meaning of this; but when  
 Jesus had been exalted to glory, then they recalled that this had  
 been done to him.

17 The people who had been with Jesus when he called Lazarus  
 18 from the tomb and raised him to life were telling of it. And that  
 was why the crowd went out to meet him; they had learned of  
 this great miracle which he had worked.

19 The Pharisees could only say to one another, "You see! There is  
 nothing you can do! The whole world has gone after him."

*There rises an unspeakable desire*

20 Among the people who had come up to worship at the feast were  
 21 some Greeks. These approached Philip, who was from Bethsaida  
 in Galilee, and said to him, "Sir, we would like to see Jesus."

22 Philip then went and told Andrew, and the two of them went to  
 tell Jesus.

*To act for life's sake*

23 And Jesus replied, "The hour has come for the Son of Man to  
 be glorified. Believe me, if the grain of wheat does not fall into  
 the earth, it remains a single grain; but if it dies it yields a rich  
 harvest.

25 The man who loves his life will lose it; the man who hates his  
 life in this world will keep it for life eternal.

Anyone who wishes to be my servant must follow me; and 26 wherever I am, there too my servant will be. The one who serves me will be honoured by my Father.

Now my heart is sorely troubled, and what am I to say? 27  
'Father, save me from this hour?'

But no! For why else have I come to this hour? 28  
So then, 'Father, glorify your name.'

*But here is the finger of God*

At that a voice echoed from heaven, "I have glorified it; and I will glorify it again."

The people who were standing around heard it. Some thought 29 it to be thunder; others said, "An angel has spoken to him."

But Jesus replied, "This voice was for you, not for me." 30

*An answer for seekers of Jesus*

Now has come the judgement of this world; the ruler of this 31 world is now to be driven out. And I, if I am lifted up from the 32 earth, will draw all men to myself."

This he said in prediction of how he was going to die. 33

*How my light is spent*

The people replied, "We have been taught in the law that the 34 Messiah is to remain for ever. What do you mean by saying that the Son of Man must be lifted up? Who is this Son of Man?"

Jesus said to them, "For yet a little while the light is with you. 35 Walk while you have the light, lest the dark come upon you. When a man walks in the dark, he does not know where he is going. While you have the light, believe in it, so that you may 36 be children of light."

*And it was I who did it all*

*Who did it all*

When he had said these things Jesus went away and was hidden 37 from them. He had done so many signs for them to see, yet they would not have faith in him.

38 Thus the words of the prophet Isaia were to be fulfilled: 'Lord, who has believed our report? To whom has the power of the Lord been revealed?'

39 And the reason why they could not believe was also given by Isaia:

40 'He has blinded their eyes, and closed their minds, lest they should see with their eyes, and perceive with their minds, and be converted, and I should heal them.'

41 These things Isaia said because he saw his glory and spoke about him.

*Without fear and without reproach?*

42 Nevertheless, even among the rulers there were many who had faith in him; but because of the Pharisees they would not confess

43 to it, lest they should be banned from the synagogue. They valued the respect of men more than the glory of God.

*All death and all life, and all reigns and all ruins, drop through me as sands*

44 Jesus cried out and said, "The man who has faith in me, has

45 faith in him who sent me; the man who sees me, sees him who sent me.

46 I have come into the world as a light; no one therefore who has

47 faith in me shall remain in darkness. And if one hears my words but does not remain faithful, it is not I who judge him; for I have

48 not come to judge the world but to save the world. Any man who rejects me or refuses to accept my words already stands under a judge: the very word that I have spoken will speak his judgement on the last day.

49 I have not spoken on my own account; the Father who sent me has himself given me commandment what to say and how to

50 say it. And I know that his commandment stands for eternal life. What I say, therefore, is what the Father has told me to say."

*Our voluntary service he requires*

The feast of the pasch was at hand. Jesus knew that the hour 13, 1 had come for him to leave this world and to go to the Father. He had loved his own who were in the world, and he would love them to the end.

The devil had already entered the heart of Judas, the son of 2 Simon Iscariot, to betray him.

During supper, therefore, Jesus, knowing that the Father had 3 entrusted all things to him, and that he had come from God and was about to return to God, got up from table, laid aside his 4 garments, and wrapped a towel round him. Having poured 5 water in a basin he began to wash the disciples' feet, and to wipe them dry with the towel he had wrapped round him.

*To bear new life or learn to live is an exacting joy*

He came to Simon Peter. And Peter said to him, "Are you, Lord, 6 going to wash my feet?"

Jesus said, "What I am doing is not clear to you now, but you 7 will understand it later."

"You shall not wash my feet," said Peter. "Never!" 8

And Jesus replied, "Unless I wash you, your place is not with me."

"In that case, Lord," said Simon Peter, "not only my feet but 9 my hands and my head."

Jesus said to him, "When one has fully bathed one needs no 10 further washing, but is altogether clean. And you are clean, but not all of you."

He knew who was going to betray him; that was why he said, 11 'You are not all clean.'

*The paradox and mode of all true loving*

When he had washed their feet he put on his garments again and 12 resumed his place at table.

He said to them, "What I have just done for you, do you see 13 what it means? You call me 'Master' and 'Lord'—and rightly, because I am. Therefore if I your Lord and Master have washed 14

15 your feet, you too must wash one another's feet. I have given you an example; what I have done for you, you also must do.

16 A servant, I tell you, is not greater than his master, an apostle is

17 not greater than the one who sent him. If you understand the lesson, act on it and you are blessed.

*Judas arose and departed : night went out to the night*

18 I am not speaking about all of you; I know whom I have chosen. But the Scripture must be fulfilled: 'One who shared meals with me has turned against me.'

19 I tell it to you now, before it happens, so that when it does happen you may believe that I am he.

20 Believe me, the man who receives an apostle of mine, receives me; and receiving me, he receives him who sent me."

21 Having said this Jesus—in deep anguish of spirit—spoke out his mind, "In God's name I tell you, one of you is going to betray me."

22 And the disciples began to look from one to another, wondering which of them he could have in mind.

23 Since one of them, the disciple whom he loved, lay beside Jesus

24 at table, Simon Peter beckoned to him with a sign, "Ask who it is he means."

25 So the disciple leant back against Jesus from where he lay, and asked, "Lord, who is it?"

26 Jesus replied, "I shall dip this bread in the dish and hand it to him; he is the one."

He then dipped the bread and gave it to Judas, the son of Simon Iscariot.

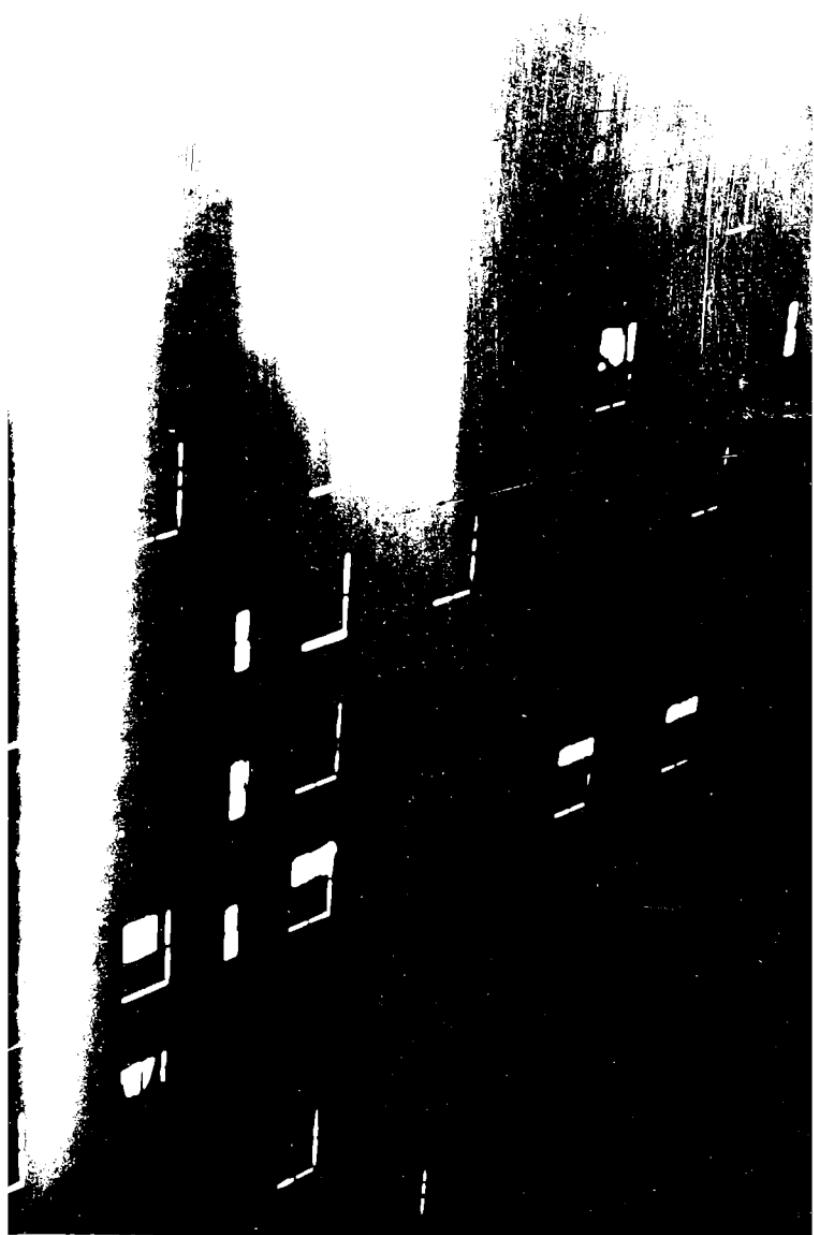
27 After the incident of the bread Sátan entered Judas.

And Jesus said to him, "What you are doing, do it soon."

28 But none of the others at table knew exactly why he said this.

29 Since Judas held the purse several thought that Jesus was telling him to go and buy what was needed for the feast; others that he was telling him to give charity to the poor.

30 Judas took the bread and went straight out.  
**And it was night.**





*And then there comes the shutting of a door*

After he had gone out Jesus said, "Now the Son of Man is 31 glorified; and in him God is glorified. If God is glorified in him, 32 God will also glorify him in himself, and will glorify him now. My friends, I still have a short while with you. You will look for 33 me; and I say to you here, what I have said already to the Jews: Where I go, you cannot come.

*Be the ways of thy giving  
As mine were to thee*

A new commandment I give to you--that you love one another. 34 As I have loved you, so must you love one another. In this way 35 all men will know that you are my disciples, that you love one another."

*Watchman, what of the night?*

Simon Peter asked him, "Lord, where are you going?" 36 And Jesus replied, "You cannot follow me now to where I go, but you will follow later." Peter said, "Lord, why can't I follow you now? I will lay down 37 my life for you." And Jesus answered, "So you will lay down your life for me? 38 Believe me, the cock will not have crowed before you deny me three times."

*Our souls have sight of that immortal sea*

He said to them, "Do not be anxious. Have faith in God; have 14, 1 faith also in me. In my Father's house there are many dwelling- 2 places. Otherwise I should have told you; for the purpose of my going is to prepare a place for you. And when I have gone and 3 prepared for you, then I will come again and take you to myself. For where I am, there I want you to be. And the way to where I go you already know." 4 Thomas said to him, "Lord, we don't know where you are going. 5 How can we know the way?" Jesus replied, "**I am the way** and the truth and the life; no one 6 comes to the Father except by me.

*I will lift up mine eyes to the hills*

- 7 If you knew me you would also know my Father. But as from now you know him; you have seen him."
- 8 Philip said to him, "Lord, show us the Father and we'll be satisfied."
- 9 And Jesus replied, "Is it possible, Philip, that I have been so long with you and you still do not know me? When one sees me one sees the Father. How then can you say, 'Show us the Father'?"
- 10 Do you not believe that I am in the Father and the Father is in me? The words that I speak to you I do not speak on my own account; it is the Father dwelling in me who does his works.
- 11 Believe me, I am in the Father, and the Father is in me; or at least believe because of what I do.
- 12 I assure you, the man who has faith in me will do the things that I do, and will do even greater than these. For I am going to the
- 13 Father, and will do for you anything you may ask in my name, that the Father may be glorified in the Son.
- 14 Anything you ask in my name, that I will do.

*I am the breath of God. I am His liberty*

- 15 If you love me you will keep my commandments. And I will ask the Father and he will give you another Advocate, the Spirit of
- 17 truth, to remain with you for ever. The world cannot receive him, because the world neither sees him nor knows him; but you know him, because he resides with you and will be in you.
- 18 **I will not leave you orphans;** I will come to you.
- 19 A little while now and the world sees me no more. But you will see me; for as I live, you too shall live.

*In thee I will overcome  
The man who once against thee fought*

- 20 On that day you will know that I am in the Father—and you in me, and I in you. The man who has my commandments and keeps them, he is the one who loves me. And loving me he will be loved by my Father; and I will love him and will reveal myself to him."





Then he was asked by the other Jude—not the Iscariot, “Lord, 22 how explain that you will reveal yourself to us and not to the world?”

Jesus replied, “The one who loves me will be faithful to my word; 23 and my Father will love him, and we will come to him and will stay with him.

Whoever does not love me is not faithful to my words. And the 24 word you hear is not mine; it is the word of the Father who sent me.

*Then dawns the Invisible : the Unseen its truth reveals*

All this I have told you while I have been with you. 25  
But the Advocate, the Holy Spirit whom the Father will send in 26 my name, will teach you all things and will bring to your minds all that I have told you.

*Grant us thy peace*

Peace I leave to you, my own peace I give to you. **Not what 27 the world gives do I give to you.** Let no anxiety, no fear, trouble your hearts. You have heard me say to you, ‘I go away, and I 28 come to you again.’ If you loved me, you would be glad that I go to the Father; for the Father is greater than I.

I have told you now before the event, so that when it comes to 29 pass you may have faith.

I shall not say much more to you now; for the ruler of this world 30 is coming. Not that he has any power against me, but the world 31 must know that I love the Father, and that what I do is what the Father has commanded me.

Rise, therefore. Let us go.”

*The life-tree am I*

“I am the true vine; my Father is the vine-dresser. Any branch 15, 1 in me that fails to bear fruit, he cuts away; any branch that bears fruit, he trims clean, to make it more fruitful still.

Already you have been cleansed by the word that I have spoken 3 to you.

## JOHN 15

- 4 Remain united with me, as I am with you. A branch cannot bear fruit of itself, unless it is united with the vine; so too you cannot bear fruit, unless you are united with me.
- 5 I am the vine; you are the branches.  
So long as each of you is united with me, and I with him, you
- 6 will bear much fruit; for without me you can do nothing. But, like the branch, if one does not remain united with me one is thrown out and left to wither; and what is withered is gathered and thrown into the fire and burnt.
- 7 So long as you are united with me and my words find root in you, ask for anything you want and it will be given you.
- 8 And by this is my Father glorified, that you yield a rich harvest, being disciples of mine.

*Be nothing first, and then be love*

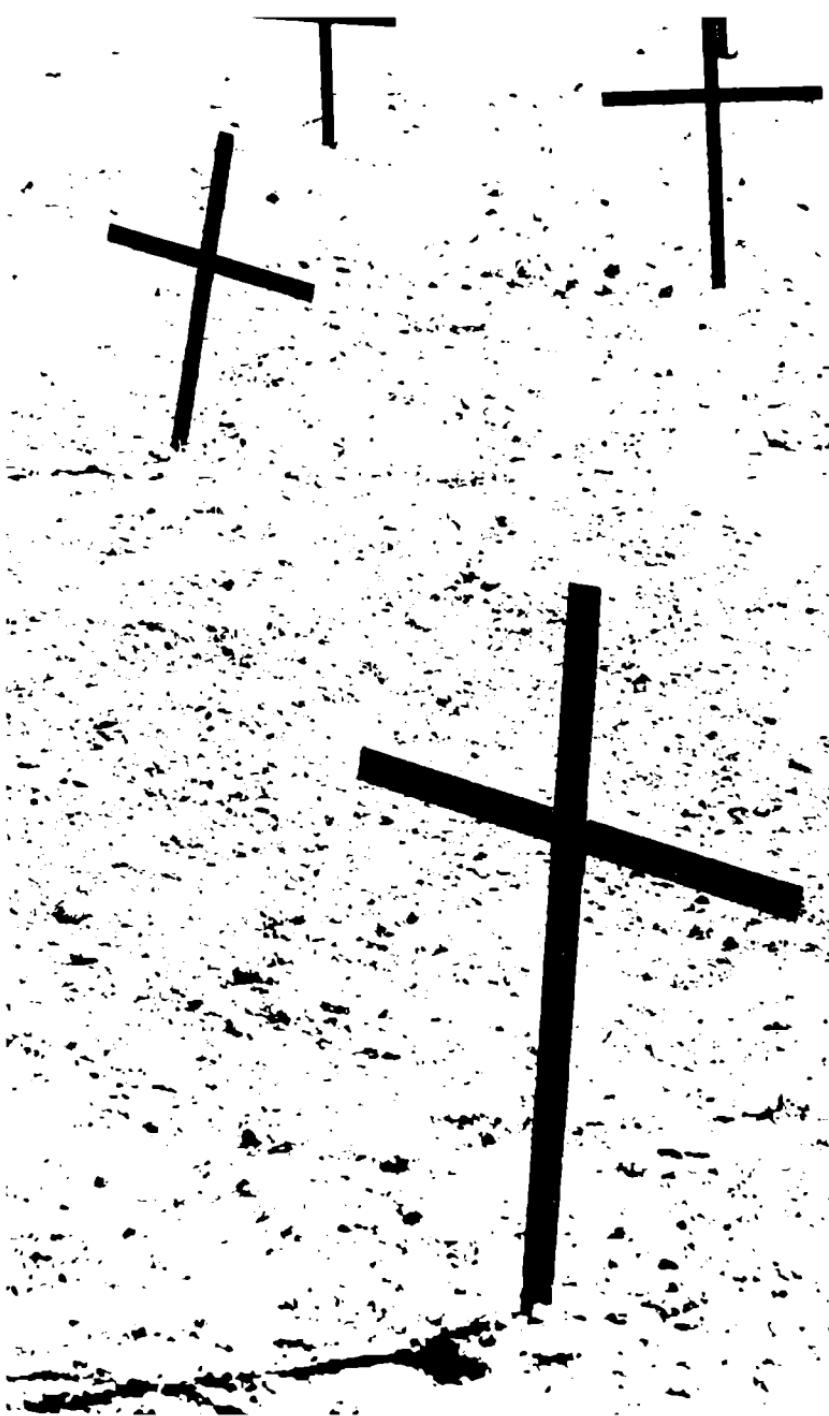
- 9 As the Father has loved me, I have loved you. Remain in my love.
- 10 If you keep my commandments you will remain in my love, as I have kept my Father's commandments and remain in his love.
- 11 I have told you this that my joy may be yours, and that your joy may be complete.
- 12 This is my commandment: Love one another, as I have loved
- 13 you. **The greatest love one can have is to give one's life for one's friends.**

*Not as servant to lord, not as master to slave, shalt thou give thee to me*

- 14 You are my friends, so long as you do what I command. Servants I do not call you, because a servant does not know what his master does; but I have called you friends, because I have made known to you all that I have learnt from my Father.
- 16 It was not you who chose me; it was I who chose you. I appointed you to go out and bear fruit, a fruit that will not pass away; so anything you ask in my name, the Father will give you.
- 17 And what I command you is this: Love one another.

*Shall I go bound and you go free?*

- 18 When the world hates you, bear in mind that it has hated me



19 before you. If you were of the world, the world would love you as its own; but since you are not of the world, since I have chosen you out of the world, for this reason the world hates you.

20 Remember what I said: 'A servant is not greater than his master.' If they have persecuted me they will persecute you; if they have been faithful to my word they will also be faithful to

21 yours. Yes, all these things they will do to you because of me, because they have not known the one who sent me.

22 If I had not come and spoken to them, they would not be guilty of sin; but now they have no excuse for their sin.

23 Anyone who hates me hates my Father. If I had not done works among them that no one else has done, they would not be guilty of sin; as it is they have seen and hated both me and my Father.

25 But so it had to be; for so it stands written in their own law: 'They have hated me without cause.'

*How in this absence thou dost steere  
Me from above*

26 When the Advocate comes, whom I will send you from the Father, the Spirit of truth who comes from the Father, he will be my witness.

27 And you too are witnesses, because you have been with me from the beginning.

16, 1 I have told you these things to guard against your losing faith.

2 You will be shut out from the synagogues. Indeed, a time is coming when everyone who kills you will think he is offering

3 worship to God; and they will do these things because they have not known either the Father or me.

4 Therefore I have told you all this so that when their hour comes you may remember that I had warned you. I did not tell you from the beginning, because I was still with you.

5 And now that I am going to him who sent me, none of you asks me, 'Where are you going?'

6 But because I have told you these things sorrow has filled your hearts.

7 Nevertheless, I tell you the truth. It is for your own good that I

go away. If I do not go, the Advocate will not come; but if I go, I will send him to you.

*Yea, Truth and Justice then  
Will down return to men*

And he, when he comes, will show up the world, in regard to sin, 8 and to justice, and to judgement.

In regard to sin, because they refused to believe in me. 9

In regard to justice, because I go to the Father, and therefore 10 you see me no more.

In regard to judgement, because the ruler of this world has 11 already been judged.

*A master-light of all our seeing*

I have much more to say to you, only you cannot bear it now. 12 But when he comes who is the Spirit of truth, he will guide you 13 to the whole truth. For he will not speak on his own account; he will speak what he hears, and will announce to you the things that are coming.

He will glorify me; for he will receive what is mine and will 14 announce it to you. All that the Father has is mine; that is 15 why I said: 'he receives what is mine and will announce it to you.'

*Hereafter, in a better world than this*

Soon you will see me no more; and soon again you will see me." 16 Some of his disciples began to ask one another, "What does he 17 mean by this 'Soon you will see me no more; and soon again you will see me'? And this 'going to the Father'?

What can he mean by this 'soon'? We don't understand." 18 Jesus knew that they wanted to question him and said, "You are 19 wondering why I said to you, 'Soon you will see me no more, and soon again you will see me'?

*Infinite passion, and the pain  
Of finite hearts that yearn*

Believe me, you will weep and mourn, while the world will 20

## JOHN 16

rejoice; you will have sorrow, but your sorrow will turn to joy.

- 21 A woman has sorrow when she is about to give birth, because her hour has come; but when her child is born she no longer remembers her anguish, **for joy that a man has been born into the world.**
- 22 So too, you feel sorrow now. But I shall see you again; and then your hearts will rejoice, with a joy that no man can take from you.
- 23 And on that day you will have no more questions to ask me.

### *The costly doors flung open wide*

Believe me, anything you ask of the Father he will give it to you in my name.

- 24 So far you have asked for nothing in my name; ask and you will receive, that your joy may be complete.
- 25 I have told you these things in figures of speech. A time will come when I shall no longer speak in figures, when I shall tell you of the Father in plain words.
- 26 On that day you will pray in my name; and I do not say to you
- 27 that I shall ask the Father on your behalf. For the Father loves you himself, because you have loved me and have believed that I have come from God.

### *The very throne of the eternal God*

- 28 I came from the Father and have come into the world; now I leave the world and return to the Father.”
- 29 His disciples replied, “Now you are speaking plainly! These are
- 30 no figures of speech! Now we are certain that you know all things, and do not have to be questioned; because of this we believe that you have come from God.”

### *And a glory that shines upon our tears*

- 31 Jesus replied, “Do you now believe?
- 32 Indeed the hour is coming—it has already come—when you will be scattered each to his own home and leave me alone. And yet I am not alone; for the Father is with me.
- 33 I have told you these things so that, united with me, you may have peace.





In the world you have suffering. **But courage! I have conquered the world.**"

*That which ever lives and moves*

That was how Jesus spoke; and then he raised his eyes to 17, 1 heaven and said:

"Father the hour has come. Glorify your Son, that your Son may glorify you.

For you have given him authority over all men, to give eternal 2 life to all whom you have given him.

And this is eternal life: that they know you, the only true God, 3 and Jesus Christ whom you have sent.

I have brought you glory on earth; I have completed the work 4 you gave me to do.

*Behind the veil, behind the veil*

And now, Father, bring me to glory with you, to the glory which 5 I had with you before the world began.

*Behold I dream a dream of good*

I have revealed your name to the men whom you gave me out 6 of the world. They were yours, and you gave them to me; they have been faithful to your word.

Now they know that everything I have has been given me by 7 you. For I have given to them the truth that you have given to 8 me. And they have received it, and have learned that I have really come from you; they have believed that you sent me.

I pray for them; not for the world do I pray, but for those whom 9 you have given me, since they are yours. All that is mine is yours, 10 all that is yours is mine; and by them I have been glorified.

*And mingle all the world with thee*

Now I am no longer in the world, because I am coming to you; 11 but they remain in the world. Holy Father, keep them in your name—the name which you have entrusted to me.

Let them be one, as we are one.

- 12 While I was with them I kept them in your name, and protected them. No one has been lost, except the man who was to be lost, because the Scripture had to be fulfilled.
- 13 But now I am coming to you; and I say this while I am still in the world, because I want their hearts to be filled with my joy.
- 14 I have delivered your word to them; and the world has hated them, because they do not belong to the world, as I do not belong to the world.
- 15 **I do not pray that you take them out of the world**, but that you keep them from evil.
- 16 They are not of the world, as I am not of the world.
- 17 Consecrate them in the truth—in your word which is truth.
- 18 As you have sent me into the world, I have sent them into the world.
- 19 And for them I consecrate myself that they too may be consecrated in the truth.

*He, They, One, All; within, without*

- 20 I pray not only for these but for all others who through their word shall have faith in me. Let them all become one; as you, Father, are in me and I am in you, let them be united in us, that the world may believe that you have sent me.
- 22 And I too have given to them the glory that you have given to me. So let them be one, as we are one. As I am in them, and you are in me, so let them become perfectly one, that the world may know that you have sent me, and have loved them as you have loved me.
- 24 Father, I pray that all whom you have given me may be with me where I am; let them have vision of my glory—the glory you have given me because you loved me before the world began.
- 25 O righteous Father, the world does not know you; but I know you, and these know that you have sent me.
- 26 I have made your name known to them, and will make it known, so that the love you have had for me may also be in them, and I in them."



*Poor, fleeting, fretful, little arrogant shapes*

18, 1 After this prayer, Jesus went out with his disciples and crossed the gorge of the Kedron river. Here there was a garden which  
2 they entered. Judas the traitor also knew the place, because Jesus  
3 and his disciples had often met in it; so Judas came there with a company of soldiers and some agents of the chief priests and the Pharisees, equipped with lanterns, torches and weapons.  
4 Jesus knew all that was going to happen him.  
He went out and said to them, "Who is it you want?"  
5 And they replied, "Jesus of Nazareth."  
He said, "I am he."  
6 Judas the traitor stood among them; and as soon as Jesus said, 'I am he,' they drew back and fell to the ground.  
7 Again he asked, "Who is it you want?"  
And they replied, "Jesus of Nazareth."  
8 He said, "I told you that I am he. Since I am the one you want, let these others go away."  
9 And so the word he had spoken would come to pass: 'I have lost none of those whom you have given me.'

*The brave man with a sword!*

10 Simon Peter had a sword with him. He drew it and struck the high priest's servant—his name was Malchus—and cut off his right ear.  
11 But Jesus said to Peter, "Put your sword back in its sheath. Shall I not drink the cup of suffering that my Father has given me?"

*Dispersed in the night*

12 The soldiers with their officer and the agents of the Jews then  
13 seized Jesus and bound him. They brought him first to Annas; for he was the father-in-law of Caiphas, the high priest for that  
14 year and the one who had advised the Jews that in their own interest one man should die for the people.  
15 Jesus was followed by Simon Peter and another disciple. The other disciple, being known to the high priest, was able to enter with Jesus to the high priest's courtyard.

Peter was left standing at the door outside, until the other disciple who was known to the high priest came out; he spoke to the girl at the door and brought Peter in. 16

But the girl said to Peter, "Aren't you one of this man's 17  
disciples?"

And Peter replied, "No, I'm not."

It was cold. The servants and the agents had made a fire and 18  
were standing round it warming themselves.

So Peter joined them too and stood there warming himself.

*Have pity, master, this is a wicked land*

Meanwhile the high priest interrogated Jesus about his disciples 19  
and his teaching.

And Jesus replied, "I have spoken openly to the world. I have 20  
never taught except where Jews come together, in synagogue or  
temple, and have said nothing in secret. Why question me? Ask 21  
the people who have heard what I said. They know my words."

When he had said this one of the agents who was standing by 22  
struck him in the face and said, "Is that how you answer the high  
priest?"

Jesus replied, "If what I have said is wrong, prove it; if I am 23  
right, why strike me?"

Annas therefore sent him away bound to Caiphas the high priest. 24

*And thus reveal my insufficiency*

*My lack, my weakness, my inferiority*

Meanwhile Simon Peter stood warming himself. The others said 25  
to him, "You're one of his disciples, aren't you?"

But he denied it flatly, "No, I'm not!"

And one of the high priest's servants, a relative of the man whose 26  
ear Peter had cut off, said to him, "Did I not see you with him  
in the garden?"

Peter denied it again. And at the same moment a cock crowed. 27

*What are we in the hands of the great God?*

They led Jesus from Caiphas to the headquarters of the Roman 28  
governor. It was early in the morning. The Jews would not enter

the building; for they had yet to eat the paschal lamb and did not want to defile themselves.

29 Pilate therefore came out to them and asked, "What charge do you bring against this man?"

30 "He's a wrongdoer," they replied. "Why else do you think we have brought him to you?"

31 "Very well," said Pilate. "Take him yourselves and try him according to your own law."

32 "But we have no right to execute capital punishment," the Jews replied.

And so the prediction of Jesus about the manner of his death was to be fulfilled.

33 Pilate therefore again entered his residence and summoned Jesus. "Are you the King of the Jews?" he asked.

34 And Jesus replied, "Do you ask on your own account, or is this what others have said about me?"

35 "Am I a Jew?" replied Pilate. "Your own people and the chief priests have handed you over to me. What have you done?"

36 Jesus answered, "My kingdom is not of this world. If my kingdom were of this world my servants would have fought to prevent my arrest by the Jews; but my kingdom is not of this world."

37 "Nevertheless, you are a king?" said Pilate.

And Jesus answered, "What you say is true. I am a king. I was born and came into the world for this very purpose, to witness to the truth. Everyone who stands for the truth hears my voice."

38 "What is truth?" Pilate replied.

*When honour's at the stake. How stand I then?*

Having said these words he went out again to the Jews and told them, "I find no case against this man."

39 You have a custom however that I release a prisoner to you at the paschal season. Would you like me then to release to you the King of the Jews?"

40 And they all shouted out, "No, not him! We want Barabbas!" (Barabbas was a revolutionary.)

*A little lower than the angels*

19, 1 Pilate then had Jesus flogged. **And the soldiers plaited a crown of thorns** and fixed it on his head. Then they dressed him in a



3 scarlet robe and began to walk towards him and say, "Greeting to the King of the Jews!" And they struck him in the face.

*'Twas I who made the blow to fall  
On him who thought no guile*

4 Once again Pilate came out and said to them, "I'm bringing him out to you to let you see that I find nothing against him."

5 And Jesus came out, wearing the crown of thorns and the scarlet robe.

"Just look at the man!" said Pilate.

6 And the moment they saw him the chief priests and the agents shouted out, "Crucify him! Crucify him!"

"Take him then yourselves and crucify him," Pilate said to them. "I find nothing against him."

7 And the Jews answered, "We have a law, and by that law he should die; he made himself out to be the Son of God."

8 When Pilate heard mention of this he was even more afraid;

9 he went in again to his residence and asked Jesus, "Where are you from?"

But Jesus gave him no answer.

10 "So you will not speak?" said Pilate. "Are you not aware that I have authority either to release you or to have you crucified?"

11 Jesus replied, "You would have no authority over me were it not given you from above; therefore those who betrayed me to you are guilty of the greater sin."

*Why Caesar is their onely King, not I*

12 After this Pilate was most anxious to release him.

But the Jews kept shouting, "If you release this man you are no friend of the emperor; anyone who claims to be king does so in defiance of Caesar."

13 On hearing this, Pilate ordered Jesus to be led out. And he took his seat on the bench, at the place called the "pavement" (in Hebrew *Gabbatha*).

14 It was about midday, on the day of preparation prior to the pasch.

And Pilate said to the Jews, "Just look at your king!"

They shouted back, "Take him away! Away! Away! Crucify 15 him!"

"Shall I crucify your king?" he asked.

And the chief priests replied, "We have no king but Caesar."

*And I must take my Cross on me  
For wronging him awhile*

Pilate then handed him over to be crucified. 16

The soldiers took him in charge. And Jesus carried his own cross 17 and went out to the 'place of the skull,' as it was called (in Hebrew *Golgotha*).

There they crucified him, along with two others—one on the 18 right and one on the left, with Jesus between them.

Pilate had a notice drawn up and fastened to the cross; it read, 19 **JESUS OF NAZARETH, KING OF THE JEWS.**

And many of the Jews read this notice, because the place where 20 Jesus was crucified was near the city; it was written in Hebrew, Latin and Greek.

The chief priests and the Jews therefore protested to Pilate, 21 "King of the Jews is not what you should write, but that this man claimed to be King of the Jews."

Pilate answered, "What I have written, I have written." 22

Having crucified Jesus the soldiers divided his clothes into four 23 parts, one for each soldier; there remained his inner tunic, which was woven in a single piece and had no seam.

The soldiers therefore decided, "Instead of tearing it let us draw 24 lots to see who will get it."

And so the prophecy of Scripture would come true: 'They divided my garments among them; they cast lots for my clothing.' For the soldiers did all these things.

*Daughter of time and mother of eternity*

Near the cross of Jesus stood his mother and her sister, Mary 25 the wife of Clopas, and Mary of Magdala.

When Jesus saw his mother standing nearby, with the disciple 26

whom he loved, he said to his mother, "Mother, there is your son."

27 To the disciple he said, "There is your mother."

And from that moment the disciple took her into his home.

*His desiderate cry*

28 Knowing that at this point everything had been brought to completion, Jesus said, to fulfil the scripture, "I am thirsty."

29 A jar of vinegar lay at hand; so they filled a sponge with the vinegar, put it on a stalk of hyssop, and held it to his lips.

*I have trodden the winepress alone*

30 And when he had taken the vinegar Jesus said, "All is brought to completion". He bowed his head and died.

*Drink, Pilgrim, here*

31 Since it was the day of preparation and the following day was a sabbath of special solemnity the Jews requested Pilate to have the legs broken and the victims removed, in order that the bodies should not remain hanging on the crosses on the sabbath.

32 So the soldiers came and broke the legs of the first, and then of the other of the two victims who had been crucified with him;

33 but when they came to Jesus they found that he was already

34 dead. Instead therefore of breaking his legs, one of the soldiers stabbed his side with a spear; immediately there flowed out blood and water.

35 The one who saw it can testify to it, and his testimony is true. And he too knows that he speaks the truth, so that you also may believe.

36 For all this took place to fulfil the Scripture, 'You shall not break

37 a bone in him'; and elsewhere the Scripture says, 'They will look on the one whom they pierced.'

*There is no love without hope*

38 Afterwards Joseph of Arimathaea, a disciple of Jesus—but in secret, out of fear of the Jews—asked Pilate for permission to remove the body of Jesus; and Pilate allowed it.

Joseph therefore came and took the body; he was joined by 39 Nicodemus, the man who had formerly come to him by night, who came with a mixture of myrrh and spices, weighing more than a half a hundredweight.

They took the body of Jesus and wrapped it with the spices in 40 strips of cloth, according to the Jewish custom of burial.

Near the place where he was crucified there was a garden, and 41 in the garden a new grave in which no one had yet been buried. Here therefore because it was the eve of the Jewish sabbath and 42 the tomb was so convenient they buried the body of Jesus.

*No hope without love*

Early on the Sunday morning, while it was still dark, Mary of 20, 1 Magdala came to the tomb and found the stone removed from the entrance. She came running to Simon Peter and the other 2 disciple whom Jesus loved and told them, "They have taken the Lord from the tomb and we don't know where they have laid him." Peter, therefore, and the other disciple went off and came 3 to the tomb. Both set off together, running, but the other disciple 4 outran Peter and arrived at it first.

Bending forward he could see the linen strips lying inside, but he 5 did not go in.

Simon Peter then arrived, following him, and he went inside. 6 He saw the linen strips lying there, and also the cloth which had 7 covered his head, which was not with the strips but rolled up in a corner by itself.

And then the other disciple went inside, the one who had arrived 8 first. He saw and believed; for they had hitherto not understood 9 from the Scriptures that he must rise from the dead.

The two disciples then returned home.

10

*And neither hope nor love without faith*

Meanwhile Mary stood outside near the tomb. She was weeping; 11 and as she wept she leant into the tomb and saw two angels in 12 white sitting there. One was at the head and the other at the feet where the body had lain.

They said to her, "Woman, why are you weeping?" 13

JOHN 20

And she said, "Because they have taken my Lord and I do not know where they have laid him."

14 As soon as she said it she turned round and saw Jesus standing behind, but did not recognize him.

15 "Woman, why are you weeping?" he said. "Who is it you are looking for?"

And Mary, thinking it was the gardener, said to him, "Sir, if you have removed him, please tell me where you have laid him, and I will take him away."

16 Jesus replied, "Mary!"

And she turned to him and said in Hebrew, "*Rabbuni*—My Master!"

*The withered hand which time interred  
Grasps in a moment the unseen*

17 Jesus said, "Do not touch me! I have not yet ascended to the Father. But go and tell my brothers, I am ascending to my Father and yours, to my God and yours."

18 Mary of Magdala then went to the disciples to tell them that she had seen the Lord and had been given this message.

*Joy the luminous cloud, Joy is the sweet voice*

19 On the evening of the same Sunday, when the assembled disciples had the doors locked for fear of the Jews, Jesus came and stood among them.

20 "Peace to you," he said, and having said it he showed them his hands and side.

And the disciples rejoiced when they saw the Lord.

*To lift the smothering weight from off my breast*

21 He said to them again, "Peace to you.

22 As the Father has sent me, I also send you." Saying this he

23 breathed on them, and added, "Receive the Holy Spirit: those whose sins you forgive shall have them forgiven; if you reserve forgiveness, then it shall be withheld."

*Believing where we cannot prove*

One of the Twelve, Thomas the so-called 'Twin', was not in the 24 group when Jesus came. The other disciples therefore told him, 25 "We have seen the Lord." And he said, "Unless I see the mark of the nails in his hands and can put my finger in their imprint, and my hand into the wound in his side, I will not believe."

A week later when the disciples were again inside and Thomas 26 in the company, the doors being locked, Jesus came and stood among them.

"Peace to you," he said.

Then he said to Thomas, "Put your finger here—and look at my 27 hands. Stretch out your hand and put it in this wound in my side. Therefore, cease this unbelief and have faith."

And Thomas answered, "My Lord and my God!" 28  
Jesus said to him, "So you have faith because you have seen me? 29 Happy those who come to the faith without having seen!"

*Nothing is innocent now but to act for life's sake*

Many other signs too Jesus did in the presence of his disciples, 30 which are not recorded in this book. This selection has been 31 written so that you may believe that Jesus is the Messiah, the Son of God, and that through this faith you may have eternal life in his name.

*This abiding Fisherman*

Afterwards Jesus again revealed himself to his disciples, by the 21, 1 lake of Tiberias. It happened in this way.

Simon Peter, Thomas the 'Twin', and Nathanael of Cana in 2 Galilee were along with the two sons of Zebedee and two other disciples.

"I'm going fishing," Simon Peter said to them. 3  
And they replied, "We'll come with you."  
They went out and got into the boat, but caught nothing all that night.

- 4 Early in the morning Jesus was standing on the shore, but the disciples did not know it was he.
- 5 He said to them, "Friends, have you caught anything?"  
"No," they replied.
- 6 Then he said, "Let out your net to the right of the boat and you will make a catch."  
They did so, and caught so many fish that they could not draw the net.
- 7 Then the disciple whom Jesus loved said to Peter, "It's the Lord!" And as soon as he learnt it was the Lord Simon Peter—not having been dressed—pulled on an overcoat and jumped
- 8 into the water. The other disciples came with the boat, dragging the net of fish; for they were only about a hundred yards from
- 9 the shore. When they landed they saw a fire with some fish on it, and bread beside it.
- 10 Jesus said to them, "Bring some of the fish you have caught."
- 11 Simon Peter then climbed into the boat and hauled the net to land. It was weighed down with one hundred and fifty-three big fish, but although the number was so large it was not torn.
- 12 Jesus said to them, "Come and have breakfast."  
And none of the disciples had the courage to ask, "Who are you?" since they knew it was the Lord.
- 13 Jesus came, took the bread and gave it to them, and the fish as well.
- 14 And this was the third time that Jesus appeared to his disciples after his resurrection.

*This unfailing guide*

- 15 After breakfast he said to Simon Peter, "Simon, son of John, do you love me more than these do?"  
"Yes, Lord," he replied, "you know that I love you."  
And Jesus said, "Look after my little ones."
- 16 He asked him a second time, "Simon, son of John, do you love me?"  
Peter answered, "Yes, Lord, you know that I love you."  
And he said, "Shepherd my flock."
- 17 A third time he said to him, "Simon, son of John, do you love me?"

And Peter was hurt that he should ask him for a third time, 'Do you love me?' "Lord, you know all things," he said, "you well know that I love you."

And Jesus said to him, "Look after my flock."

*And one that is stronger shall gird thee, and lead thee swiftly  
Whither, O heart of Youth, thou wouldest not*

"Believe me," he said to him, "when you were young, you 18 dressed yourself and were free to go where you liked; but when you grow old you will stretch out your hands for another to dress you and lead you where you won't like."

This he said in prediction of the death that Peter was to suffer 19 for the glory of God.

Then he added, "Follow me."

*And they stretched forth their hands, and the wind of the spirit took  
them*

When Peter looked round he saw the disciple whom Jesus loved 20 following behind, the one who had leant back against him at the supper and asked, "Lord, who is going to betray you?"

Seeing him, Peter said to Jesus, "What will happen to him, 21 Lord?"

And Jesus answered, "If I want him to remain until I come, is 22 it any concern of yours? Let you follow me."

These words, therefore, went out among the Christians and were 23 taken to mean that this disciple would not die. But Jesus did not say that he would not die; all he said was, 'If I want him to remain until I come, is it any concern of yours?'

*Now that I start my journey to the truth  
Let me set down the burdens of my youth*

This is the disciple who testifies to these things; he it was who 24 wrote them down. And we know that his testimony is true.

There are many other things that Jesus did. If all were recorded 25 in detail I doubt whether the world itself would hold the books that should be written.

## ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

Grateful acknowledgement is made to all modern poets (or their representatives) from whose writings lines have been used. Limited space does not allow the identification of titles and sources. The authors are as follows (reference being to page and place on the page):

A.E. (George W. Russell), 51<sup>2</sup> 236<sup>2</sup>; Conrad Aiken, 216<sup>2</sup> 287<sup>3</sup>; Martin Armstrong, 301<sup>3</sup>; W. H. Auden, 60<sup>3</sup> 62<sup>2</sup> 72<sup>4</sup> 82<sup>1</sup> 100<sup>2</sup> 152<sup>1</sup> 196<sup>2</sup> 212<sup>1</sup> 220<sup>2,3</sup> 226<sup>1</sup> 233<sup>2</sup> 260<sup>2</sup> 261<sup>1</sup> 308<sup>2</sup> 324<sup>1</sup>; George Barker, 81<sup>3</sup> 128<sup>2</sup> 174<sup>1</sup>; Laurence Binyon, 124<sup>2</sup> 152<sup>4</sup> 295<sup>1</sup> 320<sup>1</sup> 364<sup>3</sup>; Edmund Blunden, 262<sup>2</sup>; Robert Bly, 155<sup>1</sup>; Gordon Bottomley, 60<sup>1</sup>; Robert Bridges, 44<sup>2</sup> 126<sup>1</sup> 202<sup>1</sup> 215<sup>2</sup>; Rupert Brooke, 83<sup>3</sup> 171<sup>2</sup> 188<sup>2</sup> 205<sup>2</sup> 208<sup>3</sup> 210 252<sup>1</sup>; G. K. Chesterton, 94 214<sup>3</sup> 222<sup>1</sup> 289<sup>1</sup>; Padraic Colum, 115<sup>3</sup> 207<sup>3</sup> 273<sup>2</sup> 290<sup>3</sup> 360<sup>3</sup>; A. S. Cripps, 98<sup>1</sup>; H. Cust, 278<sup>4</sup>; C. Day Lewis, 64<sup>3</sup> 231<sup>1</sup> 236<sup>4</sup> 278<sup>1</sup> 315<sup>2</sup> 348<sup>3</sup> 351<sup>3</sup> 379<sup>2</sup>; Walter de la Mare, 62<sup>1</sup> 109<sup>2</sup> 290<sup>2</sup> 328<sup>2</sup>; Austin Dobson, 79<sup>1</sup> 108<sup>3</sup>; Ernest Dowson, 251<sup>1</sup>; T. S. Eliot, 10<sup>1</sup> 30<sup>1</sup> 43<sup>2</sup> 51<sup>1</sup> 55<sup>2</sup> 65<sup>3</sup> 72<sup>2,3</sup> 78<sup>1</sup> 93<sup>1,2</sup> 98<sup>3</sup> 115<sup>1,2</sup> 116<sup>3</sup> 125<sup>3</sup> 142<sup>1</sup> 162<sup>1</sup> 197 227<sup>2</sup> 232<sup>1</sup> 243<sup>4</sup> 251<sup>3</sup> 254<sup>2</sup> 306 315<sup>3</sup>; Norman Gale, 54<sup>1</sup> 131<sup>1</sup>; David Gascoyne, 179<sup>2</sup> 196<sup>3</sup> 198<sup>1</sup> 254<sup>1,3</sup> 277<sup>3</sup> 286<sup>3</sup> 287<sup>1</sup> 292<sup>2</sup> 371<sup>2</sup>; Edmund Gosse, 212<sup>2</sup>; Robert Graves, 30<sup>2</sup> 48<sup>2</sup> 51<sup>3</sup> 146<sup>2</sup> 307<sup>2</sup>; Thom Gunn, 126<sup>3</sup>; Thomas Hardy, 237<sup>2</sup> 274<sup>2</sup> 283<sup>2</sup> 335<sup>2</sup> 349<sup>4</sup> 374<sup>1</sup> 375<sup>1</sup>; Maurice Hewlett, 80<sup>2</sup> 277<sup>1</sup>; G. Manley Hopkins, 34<sup>2</sup> 66<sup>2</sup> 68<sup>1</sup> 116<sup>4</sup> 192<sup>2</sup> 236<sup>1</sup>; A. E. Housman, 257<sup>3</sup>; Ford Madox Hueffer, 302<sup>1</sup>; Randall Jarrell, 104<sup>4</sup> 105<sup>1,2</sup> 219<sup>2</sup> 340<sup>1</sup>; David Jones, 376<sup>1</sup>; Patrick Kavanagh, 58<sup>3</sup> 61<sup>3</sup> 166<sup>1</sup> 223<sup>2</sup> 260<sup>1</sup> 281<sup>1</sup> 305<sup>2</sup>; P. J. Kavanagh, 99<sup>2</sup>; Richard Kell, 214<sup>2</sup>; Brendan Kennelly, 28<sup>3</sup> 58<sup>2</sup> 156<sup>3</sup> 211<sup>2</sup> 219<sup>3</sup> 264<sup>2</sup> 280<sup>1</sup> 294<sup>4</sup>; Sidney Keyes, 192<sup>1</sup> 318<sup>1</sup> 371<sup>1</sup>; Rudyard Kipling, 73 222<sup>1</sup>; Robert Lowell 177<sup>1</sup> 371<sup>3</sup>; Louis MacNeice, 231<sup>3</sup> 255<sup>1</sup>; John Masefield, 61<sup>1</sup> 221<sup>1</sup> 262<sup>3</sup> 297<sup>1,2,3</sup>; Edgar Lee Masters, 56<sup>3</sup>; Herman Melville, 84<sup>3</sup>; George Meredith, 141<sup>2</sup>; Harold Monro 222<sup>3</sup> 266<sup>2</sup> 274<sup>1</sup> 329; John Montague, 126<sup>2</sup>; Thomas Moult, 171<sup>3</sup> 248<sup>1</sup>; Edwin Muir, 9<sup>2</sup> 43<sup>3</sup> 137<sup>1</sup> 308<sup>3</sup>; Henry Newbolt, 381<sup>1,2</sup>; Robert Nichols, 102<sup>3</sup> 352<sup>1</sup>; Alfred Noyes, 25<sup>3</sup> 42<sup>2</sup> 55<sup>1</sup> 64<sup>1</sup> 66<sup>1</sup> 81<sup>3</sup> 108<sup>1</sup> 110 120<sup>1,2</sup> 151<sup>1</sup> 164 188<sup>1</sup> 195<sup>2</sup> 205<sup>1</sup> 237<sup>1,2</sup> 274<sup>3</sup> 298 323<sup>1</sup> 326<sup>3</sup> 347<sup>1</sup> 356<sup>2</sup>; Frank O'Connor, 273<sup>1</sup>; Arthur O'Shaughnessy, 8<sup>2</sup> 38<sup>2</sup> 39<sup>1</sup> 248<sup>2</sup>; Séamus O'Sullivan, 14<sup>2</sup> 127<sup>4</sup> 318<sup>3</sup>; Wilfred Owen, 84<sup>4</sup> 242 256<sup>2</sup>; Herbert Palmer, 163<sup>2</sup> 186<sup>1</sup>; Coventry Patmore, 318<sup>2</sup>; Ezra Pound, 104<sup>3</sup> 146<sup>1</sup> 155<sup>2</sup> 202<sup>3</sup> 261<sup>2</sup> 337; Arnold Price 311<sup>1</sup>; Kathleen Raine, 147<sup>3</sup> 375<sup>2</sup>; Herbert Read, 312<sup>1</sup>; Anne Ridler, 351<sup>2</sup>; Michael Roberts, 84<sup>2</sup>; Theodore Roethke, 14<sup>1</sup> 163<sup>1</sup> 192<sup>3</sup> 200<sup>2</sup> 223<sup>1</sup> 319 342<sup>1</sup>; Victoria Sackville-West, 308<sup>1</sup>; Siegfried Sassoon, 282<sup>1</sup>; Anne Sexton 96<sup>2</sup>; Edward Shanks, 370<sup>2</sup>;

#### ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

G. B. Shaw, 264<sup>1</sup>; Edith Sitwell, 226<sup>3</sup>; Stephen Spender, 160<sup>1</sup> 206<sup>1</sup> 211<sup>1</sup> 305<sup>1</sup> 355<sup>1</sup>; William Force Stead, 293<sup>3</sup>; James Stephens, 17<sup>2</sup> 18<sup>1</sup> 38<sup>1</sup> 83<sup>1</sup> 208<sup>2</sup> 247<sup>3</sup> 324<sup>2</sup> 326<sup>1</sup>; Wallace Stevens, 34<sup>3</sup> 127<sup>1,2</sup>; Jan Struther, 79<sup>3</sup>; Algernon C. Swinburne, 26<sup>1</sup> 169<sup>1</sup> 243<sup>1</sup> 294<sup>5</sup> 335<sup>1</sup> 350<sup>2</sup> 355<sup>2</sup> 359<sup>3</sup> 360<sup>2</sup>; Arthur Symons, 370<sup>1</sup>; Allen Tate, 61<sup>2</sup> 207<sup>1</sup>; Dylan Thomas, 69<sup>2</sup> 343; Francis Thompson, 95 187<sup>2</sup> 258<sup>2</sup> 270<sup>2</sup> 302<sup>2,3</sup> 304<sup>1</sup>; John Wain, 381<sup>3</sup>; Vernon Watkins, 40<sup>2</sup> 214<sup>1</sup> 301<sup>1</sup> 360<sup>1</sup> 378<sup>1</sup>; Lawrence Whistler, 198<sup>2</sup>; Walt Whitman, 72<sup>1</sup> 91<sup>1</sup> 106<sup>1</sup> 127<sup>3</sup> 159<sup>2</sup> 215<sup>1</sup>; Charles Williams, 131<sup>2</sup> 338; David Wright, 258<sup>1</sup>; William Butler Yeats, 14<sup>3</sup> 40<sup>1</sup> 65<sup>4</sup> 170<sup>2</sup> 211<sup>3</sup> 252<sup>3</sup> 277<sup>2</sup> 278<sup>3</sup>.

\* \* \* \* \*

For permission to use copyright material the editor is indebted to the authors (or their representatives) and the publishers: for lines from W. H. Auden, George Barker, T. S. Eliot, Randall Jarrell, David Jones, Robert Lowell, Louis MacNeice, Edwin Muir, Ezra Pound, Anne Ridler, Michael Roberts, Theodore Roethke, Herbert Read, Stephen Spender, Wallace Stevens, and Vernon Watkins, to Faber and Faber Ltd; for lines from Laurence Binyon, Walter de la Mare, A. E. Housman, John Masefield, and James Stephens, to the Society of Authors as the literary representatives of the estates of these authors; for lines from Edmund Gosse, Maurice Hewlett, Thomas Moult, and Arthur Symons, to William Heinemann Ltd.; for lines from *The Poetical Works of Robert Bridges*, to the Clarendon Press, Oxford; for lines from G. Manley Hopkins, Anne Sexton, Charles Williams, Conrad Aiken, and David Gascoyne, to the authors or their representatives and to Oxford University Press; for lines from *Collected Poems* by Thomas Hardy to the Trustees of the Hardy estate and to Macmillan and Co. Ltd.; for lines from *Collected Poems* by James Stephens, to Mrs. Iris Wise and Macmillan and Co. Ltd.; for lines from *The Collected Works* of Alfred Noyes, to John Murray; for lines from *Collected Poems* of Harold Monro, to Gerald Duckworth and Co. Ltd.; for lines from Patrick Kavanagh, to MacGibbon and Kee Ltd.; for lines from Brendan Kennelly, to the author and Allen Figgis Ltd.; for lines from G. K. Chesterton, to Miss D. Collins; for lines from Robert Graves, to the author; for lines from Rudyard Kipling, to Mrs. George Bambridge; for lines from Henry Newbolt, to Mr. Peter Newbolt; for lines from W. B. Yeats, to Mr. M. B. Yeats; for lines from Padraic Colum, to the author; for lines from John Wain to the author and Macmillan and Co. Ltd. If there are any omissions or mistakes the editor apologises and will have them corrected if there is a second edition.

## PHOTOGRAPHS

Harry Arnold, 324  
Associated Press, 367  
Fergus Bourke, 44 258 355  
Boever, Antwerp, 22  
Camera Press, 10 34 86 123 152 185 198 219 231 244 247 262 273 274  
284 356  
CIRIC, Geneva, 7 62 71 212  
Horst Deike, 224 252  
d'Haen, 228  
Colman Doyle, 51 52 71 110 131 148 174 308 340  
Willi Francois, 37  
Inter Nationes, 17 248 315 323  
Irish Press, 14 18 138 169  
Irish Times, 48  
Irish Tourist Board, 119 269 270 330  
Keystone, 25 27 30 40 155  
Photographic P.R. Services, Dublin, 56 195  
Louis Pieterse, 192 266  
Quell-Verlag, 21 66 96 102 115 134 142 145 156 166 191 208 234 241  
311 316 320 333 352 359 360 368  
F. Quigley, 77 137  
Refot, Stockholm, 128  
Religious News Service, 106 120  
Thomas Ryan, 216 301  
George Schofield, 74  
Shelter, 33  
Topix, 364  
United Press Europix, 116 159 202 302 312

